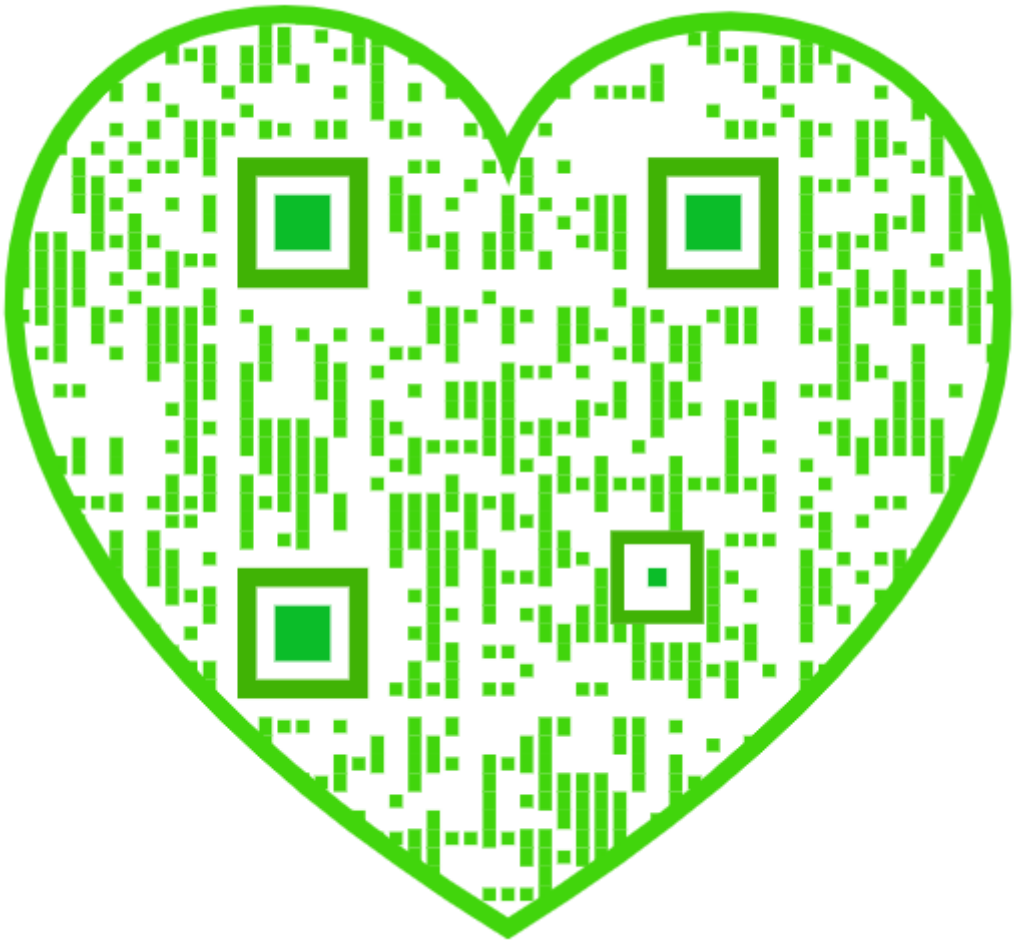
F
229
.T99



Class F229
Book .T79

[Enlarged from a cut in the *Scheeps-Togt van Anthony Chester Na Virginia, gedaan in het jaar 1620.* Printed at Leyden by Peter Vander, 1707. A pamphlet. 12mo.]

2348
4340

THE CRADLE

OF

THE REPUBLIC:

Jamestown and James River.

BY

LYON GARDINER TYLER,

PRESIDENT OF THE COLLEGE OF WILLIAM AND MARY,
WILLIAMSBURG, VIRGINIA.

RICHMOND, VA.:
WHITTET & SHEPPERSON, GENERAL PRINTERS.
1900.

Copyrighted
by
LYON G TYLER,
1900.

PREFACE.

In giving this book to the public I wish to express my acknowledgments to Philip Alexander Bruce and Alexander Brown for the assistance which they have rendered me through their monumental works, *The Economic History of Virginia in the Seventeenth Century* and *The First Republic in America*. My sincere thanks are also due to H. B. Smith, of the city of Williamsburg, who aided me very materially in preparing the charts of Jamestown Island and James River, and to Robert Lee Traylor, of Richmond, who placed his library at my service, and aided in correcting the proof-sheets.

Lyon G. Tyler.

Williamsburg, Va., *May* 14, 1900.

CONTENTS.

PAGE.

I. INDIANS ALONG JAMES RIVER, ... 9

II. THE ISLAND OF JAMESTOWN, ... 15

The Country Surrounding Jamestown Island, ... 20

III. THE ENGLISH AT JAMESTOWN, ... 21

1. *Summary of Political Events,* 62

2. *Burgesses of Jamestown,* 64

IV. CHARACTER OF THE EMIGRANTS, ... 66

V. THE FORT, ... 69

VI. THE CHURCH, ... 73

1. *Furniture and Service,* 80

2. *Tombstones on the Island,* 82

3. *List of Ministers and their Biographies,* 87

VII. BLOCK-HOUSES, ... 99

VIII. THE GLASS-HOUSE, ... 102

IX. THE GOVERNOR'S HOUSE, ... 106

X. THE STATE HOUSE, ... 110

XI. POLITICAL DIVISIONS, ... 117

XII. ORIGIN AND HISTORY OF PLACES ALONG JAMES RIVER, ... 120

AUTHORITIES, ... 165

ILLUSTRATIONS.

PAGE.

JAMESTOWN IN 1622, ... *Frontispiece.*

CHART OF JAMESTOWN ISLAND.

VIEW OF JAMESTOWN FROM SANDY BAY, ... 19

THE INDIAN MASSACRE IN 1622, ... 34

VIEW OF JAMESTOWN FROM THE RIVER, ... 61

THE TOWER OF JAMESTOWN, ... 81

WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE, as it appeared during the Presidency of Dr. James Blair, ... 95

A BLOCK-HOUSE, ... 100

THE GOVERNOR'S HOUSE—GREENSPRING, ... 107

CHART OF JAMES RIVER, SHOWING THE EARLY SETTLEMENTS.

GROUPING OF HOUSES—

BACON'S CASTLE—CARTER'S GROVE—LOWER BRANDON—UPPER BRANDON, ... 125

MALVERN HILL—SHIRLEY—APPOMATTOX, ... 141

BERKELEY—WESTOVER—WEYANOKE—SHERWOOD, ... 157

The Cradle of the Republic.

I.

THE INDIANS ALONG JAMES RIVER.

AT the time of the arrival of the English in Virginia, the Indians found inhabiting the tide-water section were united in a confederacy of tribes, of which Powhatan was the head war-chief, or werowance. He had his werowocomoco, or town of the chieftain, on Purton Bay (*i. e.*, Poetan, or Powhatan Bay), York River. These Indians belonged to the Algonquin race.

Each tribe received its werowance by appointment of Powhatan, and these petty werowances numbered in all about thirty-four. They had each their proper territory defined by natural bounds, beyond which none presumed to pass without permission. Their towns were fixed habitations on the river side, and near by were cleared fields in which their corn, tobacco, gourds, pumpkins, beans and cymlings were sowed.

At and around the Chesapeake Bay, on the south side, the Chesapeake Indians had their villages. It would appear from Strachey that they were new-comers in that region, and successors of others, who had fallen victims to the jealousy and cruelty of Powhatan. "Not long since," says Strachey, "his priests had told Powhatan that from the Chesapeake Bay a nation should arise which should dissolve and give end to his empire, for which (perplexed with this devilish oracle and divers understandings thereof), according to the ancyent and gentile customs, he destroyed and put to sword all such who might lie under any doubtful construccion of the said prophecie, as all the inhabitants, werowance, and his subjects of that province."

Perhaps it was the memory of this event and this prophecy

that made the Indians in the Chesapeake region so quick to resent the landing of the whites at Cape Henry in April, 1607.

Above the Chesapeakes, on the same side, were the Nansemonds, governed by four werowances—Weyhohomo, Amapetough, Weyongopo and Tirchtough. Their villages were for the most part on the Nansemond River.

Next came the Warascoyacks, residing in the county of Isle of Wight. Their chief town, Warascoyack, was near Smithfield, on Pagan River, and there was a small village, Mokete, at Pagan Point, and another village, Mathomank, on Burwell's Bay. The werowance was Tackonekintaco.

The neighbors of the Warascoyacks were the Tappahannas, or Quioughcohannocks, whose territory extended through Surry and Prince George counties. The werowance was Pepiscumah, called for short Pepisco, who kept on good terms with the whites. However, in 1610, he had been deposed by Powhatan, and one of Powhatan's wives, Oholase, was queen in the minority of her son Tahahcoope, who lived at Chawopo with Chopoke, one of Pepisco's brothers. Quioughcohannock was on Upper Chippoke's Creek, near the present Claremont. The marsh at Brandon still retains the name of the Indians who once inhabited that neighborhood—being known as Tappahanna Marsh.

Next in order were the Weyanokes, whose chief town, "Weanock," appears to have been at Flower de Hundred. Their chief was called Kaquothocum.

Then came the people of the Appomattox River. The werowance of "Appumatuck" was Coquonasom, and his sister, Opussoquionuske, was queen of a small village on the site of Bermuda Hundred. In 1610, having treacherously caused her men to attack the English, whom she had received under the guise of hospitality in her village, Queen Opussoquionuske was driven by Captain George Percy and his men from her town, and the place made, shortly after, the seat of an English settlement—Bermuda Hundred.

Above the falls of the river resided the hereditary enemies of the Powhatans—the Manakins, on the site of whose chief town in Nicholson's administration the French Huguenots were established.

Proceeding down the river on the north side, the tribe first met with was the Powhatans. They were seated just below the falls. Powhatan was born at this place, but his residence was at Werowocomoco, on York River, till, becoming uneasy because of the neighborhood of the whites, he removed to a place called Orapaks, at the head of the Chickahominy River. At the coming of the English, the werowance at the falls was Parahunt, one of Powhatan's sons, called Tanxpowhatan, which means "Little Powhatan." The village of Powhatan was situated on a hill, and the site was purchased by Captain John Smith, and called "Non-such." The purchase price was in part a white boy named Henry Spelman (son of Sir Henry Spelman, the historian), who spent many years among the Indians, learned their language, and was afterwards interpreter for the colony. Captain Francis West also purchased a tract of Parahunt situated in a valley near the falls, which was subject to overflow. A quarrel rose between West and Smith as to the advantages of the two sites, and, the Indians attacking the settlers, the place was abandoned. "Powhatan" is still the name of a place below Richmond, which was long the home of the Mayo family.

Below the Powhatans were the Indians of Arrohateck. Their chief town was just above the Dutch Gap Canal, opposite Proctor's Creek, in Chesterfield county. A farm in that quarter, owned by the Cox family for many years, still retains the Indian name. The werowance in 1612 was Ashuaquid.

Adjoining them was the territory of the Weyanokes, whose chief town was, however, on the south side of the river at Flower de Hundred.

Next came the territory of the Paspahegh Indians, extending from about Sturgeon Point, in Charles City county, to Skiffes Creek, in James City county. As Jamestown was located in this district, these Indians were brought into more important relations with the whites than any of the tribes. Their chief was Wochinchopunck, and from the first he fiercely resented the intrusion of the whites in his domain. In a savage hand-to-hand fight with Captain Smith on the connecting neck, he was taken prisoner and carried to Jamestown, but escaped. He and his warriors would lie in wait near the glass-house opposite and cut off the unwary whites, who ventured too far. At length, on

February 9, 1611, Captain George Percy, the commandant at Jamestown, sent Ensigns Powell and Waller to surprise him. Ensign Powell, coming up with him near the old block-house, "thrust him twice through the body with an arming sword;" and Lieutenant Puttock, of the block-house, overtaking another chief, closed with him, and "with his dagger, sent him to accompany his master in the other world."

The chief town of the Paspaheghs was at Sandy Point, nearly opposite to Quionghcohannock.

Finally, near the mouth of the river was the district of the Kecoughtans. Some years before the English had arrived, Powhatan had pursued the same course as to the people there as he had to the people in Chesapeake.

The Kecoughtan tribe was then a very powerful one. Their country was the seat of sometimes as many as a thousand Indians and three hundred houses. Powhatan regarded the power of the tribe with suspicion, and on the death of the old werowance of the place, he stepped in while things were in confusion, and conquered the people, killing the new chief and most of the tribe, and transporting the survivors over the York, where he quartered them with his own people. After much suit, these survivors obtained from him the country of Pianketank, in Gloucester county, which country he had likewise dispeopled just about the time the English first arrived in Virginia. On one of their visits to Werowocomoco, the colonists were shown the scalps of these unfortunates posted on the cabins of the chief.

Powhatan placed Pochins, one of his sons, at Kecoughtan. His town appears to have been situated on the left side of Hampton River, near the Soldiers' Home.

There was a large open country in the neighborhood of nearly two or three thousand acres, and the fishing was excellent. When, therefore, the Indians of Kecoughtan captured and killed a man named Humphrey Blunt, near the point in Warwick county which bears his name, Gates made it the excuse to drive them away altogether. On July 19, 1610, he set upon the town and captured it; and to secure his new conquest he put up two forts on the River Southampton (near the Soldiers' Home), which he called Fort Henry and Fort Charles.

The fighting strength of these Indian tribes was estimated by

Strachey, about 1612, as follows: Chesapeakes, 100 warriors, Nansemonds, 200; Warascoyacks, 60; Tappahannas, or Quiougheohannocks, 60; Weyanokes, 100; Appomattox, 120; Powhatans, 50; Arrohateeks, 60; Paspagheghs, 40, and Kecoughtans, 30—in all, 820 warriors.

Near by, on the York River, were numerous other tribes, the nearest of which was the Kiskiacks, two miles above Yorktown, the werowance of which was Ottahotin. Upon the Pamunkey River, a branch of the York, were the villages of Powhatan's three brothers, Opitchapan, Opechancanough and Kecatough. Along the Chickahominy, where there were fine fowling and fishing, lived a tribe of three hundred fighting men, who, while they paid tribute to Powhatan, did not receive any werowances from him, but were governed by their priests, assisted by their old men, whom they called Caweawwassoughes.

The extent of Powhatan's dominions was greater than any of his predecessors in authority ever had. He had inherited only the countries of Powhatan, Arrohateck, Appomattox, Pamunkey, Youghtamund and Mattapamient, but he had by craft and arms extended his dominions till they included all the country from the Roanoke River on the south to a palisaded town called Tockwogh, standing at the head of Chesapeake Bay, in forty degrees north latitude, or thereabouts.

He had a regular system of finance, and an organized force of tax-gatherers whom he sent around regularly to make collections. His laws on the subject were rigid and despotic. Every werowance had to pay Powhatan eighty per cent. of all the commodities which their country yielded or the chase afforded; "insomuch that they dared not dress a single deerskin or put it on until Powhatan had seen and refused it."

To enforce his commands, he kept always about him fifty armed savages, of the tallest in his kingdom, who were always ready for war. To those who offended him he knew no mercy or compassion. The werowances everywhere groveled before him in abject terror.

This terrible old chief was over seventy years old when the English first intruded upon his dominions. He bore his years well; was tall in stature, and powerfully framed. His thin gray hair floated over his broad shoulders, and his countenance was

furrowed and melancholy. He had a round face and some few hairs upon his chin and upper lip. He died in April, 1618, and was succeeded by his brother Opitchapan.

The Indians of Tidewater Virginia were very fond of reveling and dancing, and they had various musical instruments made of pipes and small gourds, upon which they observed certain rude times. They had their love songs, which they sang with some idea of tune. They had also their angry and scornful songs against the Tassantassees, as they called the English. One of these songs is given by Strachey. It celebrates an attack which they made upon the English at the falls of the James River in 1610, when Lord Delaware sent an expedition from Jamestown to search the country above the falls for gold mines. In this attack Lord Delaware's nephew, Captain William West, was killed, Simon Skore, a sailor, and one Cobb, a boy, taken prisoners. The song ran as follows:

Matanerew-shashashewaw erawango pechecoma
Whe Tassantassa inoshashaw yehockan pocosack.
Whe whe, yah haha nehe wittowa, wittowa.

Matanerew shashashewaw erawango pechecoma
Capt. Newport inoshashaw neir inhoc natian matassan
Whe whe, yah haha nehe wittowa, wittowa.

Matanerew shashashewaw erawango pechecoma
Thom Newport inoshashaw neir inhoc natian monacock:
Whe whe, yah haha nehe wittowa, wittowa.

Matanerew shashashewaw erawango pechecoma
Pochin Simon inoshashaw ningon natian monahack,
Whe whe, yah haha nehe wittowa, wittowa.

The words of the song boasted that they had killed the English in spite of their guns (pocasacks), and the copper baubles with which Captain Christopher Newport had hoped to buy them off, that the monacock (bright sword) carried by Thomas Newport (that is, Thomas Savage, whom Newport had presented to Powhatan, calling him his son) had no terrors, and that they had captured Simon Skore despite his tomahawk. The chorus of each verse made mock lamentations over the death of Simon Skore, whom they tortured, *Whe, whe*, etc., and the words, "Yah haha nehe wittowa, wittowa," conveyed a jeering laughing commentary upon the English lack of fortitude under torment.

II.

THE ISLAND OF JAMESTOWN.

JAMESTOWN ISLAND lies on the north side of the James River, about thirty-two miles from the mouth, and runs for length the course of the river, which is southeast. It averages two and one-half miles in length, and three-quarters of a mile in breadth. Its area, according to a recent survey, is about seventeen hundred acres, much of which is marsh land. Its soil is very fertile, and produces fine crops of corn and wheat.

It is surrounded on three sides by the James River, and on the north side by the Back River, which separates it from the mainland. It is traversed by Pitch and Tar Swamp on its northern part and Passmore Creek on its southern part.

Pitch and Tar Swamp begins near James River on the west end, winds around the church, passes back of the spot where the State House once stood, and, gathering its waters as it goes, empties into Back River. Branches of the swamp penetrate the island in many directions; but by ditching and draining its upper portion has been saved to cultivation, and now in that quarter smiles a beautiful valley, which was once sombre with the pine and the gum tree.

Passmore Creek, named after Thomas Passmore, a carpenter, who was living on the island in 1623, traverses the lower end of the island. It begins at James River, near three-quarters of a mile below the present church, and, running southeasterly nearly the course of the river, flows into the river at the eastern end of the island, cutting off about one-third of the whole area.

The upper part of the strip of dry land between this creek and the river is known as "Goose Hill."

The point at the extreme eastern end was known in the land grants as "Black Point."

The land at the western end of the island rises well above the water, and there the channel of the river passes close to the

shore. But at the eastern end, the land, though in the interior fairly elevated, falls away on all sides, as it approaches the water. Consequently the river in that quarter is very shallow for some distance out, and the region of water is known as "Goose Island Flats." It was because the Merrimac drew too much water to cross these flats that she was blown up by the Confederates in 1862.

A great deal of money has been spent by successive proprietors to drain the numerous swamps in the island. Ditches, dykes and floodgates have been tried, and while much success has attended these efforts, there seems to be a continual tendency for the land to revert to its former condition.

There was in 1607 a little bay at the point where Powhatan creek struck the neck of the island, and near this bay was a landing. The bay was called Sandy Bay, and the landing called Frigate Landing. The island was then a peninsula tacked to the mainland at the Sandy Bay by a narrow isthmus.

In the years that have elapsed since that time great changes in the topography have ensued. The rush of the waters down the river and the swelling of the tides beating against the shores have carried away much of the soil along the mainland, and at the west end of the island.

We are told that in 1676 the connecting isthmus was only ten paces (fifty feet) wide.

Mr. Clayton, who wrote in 1688, makes the neck thirty yards wide, but says it was entirely submerged at the spring tides. In 1748, the people of James City petitioned the General Assembly to compel Richard Ambler, who kept the ferry at Jamestown Island, to keep up the causeway, which had been erected over the neck of the island. Col. Tarleton, in his *Campaigns*, states that in 1781 Jamestown Island was "separated from the mainland by a small gut of water, not two feet wide at the reflex of the tide."

In 1805, Professor L. H. Girardin, in his *Amoenitates Graphicae*, wrote of the ravages of the waters in the following words:

"This place of original settlement (Jamestown) has undergone a very considerable alteration by the elementary war which the waters and the winds have unceasingly waged against it. Its diminution both on the southern and western side may be easily traced. Many yards of the

palisades erected by the first settlers are still to be seen at low tide standing at least 150 or 200 paces from the present shore. The pieces of timber which were fixed perpendicularly in the ground, have decayed, until they have become entirely submerged by the gradual advancement of the river upon the land, where the fort originally stood. This fact shows that the land has sustained a great loss on its southern side; on the western the attrition is perhaps still more considerable. This conjecture acquires a high degree of probability from what we see every day still taking place, and from the very narrow slip of land (even this is inundated at the time of high water) now remaining on that side as the only obstacle to the force of the water, which threatens soon unless counteracted by labor, to form a new channel through the island, *a denomination which Jamestown may shortly assume.*"

That there was still a slip of land in 1805 connecting the island with the mainland at low tide was doubtless due to the constant labor of the owners of that part of the island in repairing the ravages of the water.

When we next read of the island in the *Southern Literary Messenger* for 1837, we are told that the neck "had long since disappeared, having been washed away by the force of the current and the tides."

The island had passed the year before into the possession of Colonel Goodrich Durfey, and he, feeling the necessity of better communication with the outside world, constructed a bridge in the water over the submerged neck; and upon this bridge passed the stage carrying passengers to the wharf at Jamestown, where the steamers received them.

In 1848, Benson J. Lossing visited the place, and found John Coke, father of the late Richard Coke, senator from Texas, in possession. Dr. Lossing made a sketch of the Sandy Bay from the opposite shore, then "four hundred yards" distant from the island. This view, which is printed in the *Field Book of the American Revolution,* shows the piles only of the bridge. The bridge itself, erected by Colonel Durfey, had been swept away some months before by a tremendous gale and high tide, which submerged nearly the whole of the island, for three days keeping Mr. Coke and his family, who resided there, close prisoners, and causing them to use for fuel the ornamental trees near the house, in the absence of other material.

In October, 1856, Bishop Meade, in company with Dr. Silas Totten, of William and Mary College, and others, visited the

island, then owned by Major William Allen, of Claremont. The mainland and the island were found separated by "a third of a mile(?) of water." The only access was by row-boat. The work of destruction had passed nearly a mile from the original connection with the mainland to the lower part of the old settlement, where once stood the public buildings and the church. A large portion of the most beautiful part of the island had been engulfed by the waves. The bank was giving away within one hundred and fifty yards of the old tower to the church.

A year or two after this Major William Allen originated the present causeway across the swamp of the Back River. This was greatly improved in years afterwards by the late Edward E. Barney, who placed a handsome bridge across the Back River. The present road affords a shorter and more convenient route to the island than the old way across the neck.

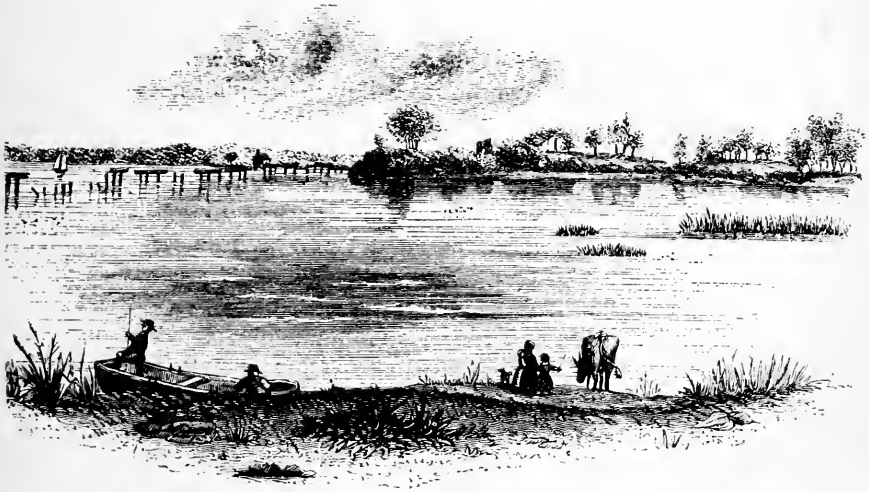
In 1895, the ladies of the Association for the Preservation of Virginia Antiquities obtained from Congress an appropriation of ten thousand dollars for protecting the island against the encroachment of the waters. Large stones were placed at the west end against the shore, but the waves laughed at the engineer, scooped out the sand from behind the stones and caused them to fall flat. Since that time the shore has receded some fifteen feet or more, or on the average about three feet a year.

Now how much land has the island lost at the upper end since the voyagers landed in 1607? Of course, no exact reply can be given to such a question. Nevertheless the following considerations may help us in reaching an approximate conclusion:

In 1716, Hon. Philip Ludwell, being disturbed by the claim that the Governor's Land of three thousand acres belonging to the public took in a part of Greenspring, showed that the shore on the mainland, where the Governor's Land was situated, for six miles above Jamestown, had lost by the encroachments of the river one hundred acres in the past thirty years.

On April 28, 1900, the author, in company with Mr. H. B. Smith, of Williamsburg, repaired to Jamestown and took some measurements and observations. We found the piles of Colonel Durfey's old bridge across the neck still standing, with an expanse of water intervening on either side. On most of the neck at low tide the water was not over two feet deep. The distance

from shore to shore, taking the line of the piles, is seventeen hundred feet, or nearly one-third of a mile. On the main side we found the bed of the old highway, and large trees growing in the centre. The distance from a tree standing near the neck on the island, along the west shore, to the southeast shore is very nearly fifteen hundred feet. From the latter point retracing our steps to the middle of the first ridge, it is three hundred feet. On the shore at this point are the last relics of the old powder magazine. Along the ridge the existence of scattered brick and an old well



VIEW OF JAMESTOWN FROM SANDY BAY.

[Sketched in 1848. Lossing's *Field Book of the American Revolution*, Vol. II., p. 240.]

indicate where the Back Street once ran. From the middle of this ridge to the middle of Pitch and Tar Swamp it is three hundred and sixty-one feet; from the last point to the top of the second ridge it is three hundred and thirty-nine feet, and from the top of this ridge to the tree near the submerged neck it is five hundred feet.

I have been told by a person who lived on the island as a youth that a cypress tree that now stands two hundred and ninety feet in the water from the shore near the old magazine, was, in 1846,

on the shore where the water at high tide would scarcely flood. I have also been told that the piles of the old steamboat wharf, built by Col. Durfey near the southwest point above the church, were so near the shore fifty-five years ago that it required only a plank to reach to the pier-head. It must be remembered too that George Percy says that the channel in 1607 approached so near the shore that the settlers were able to moor their ships to the trees growing on land. On the whole, then, I think the ancient shore above the church probably followed very closely the line indicated by the present channel of the river. On the west the line of the shore made a sharper angle with the channel than now. It extended out perhaps three hundred yards in that quarter over the present shallow ledge of water.

Probably, then, fifty or sixty acres at the upper part of the island have been worn away in the course of two hundred and ninety-three years.

THE COUNTRY SURROUNDING JAMESTOWN ISLAND.

The portion of the country beyond the neck on the west side of Powhatan Creek was called *The Main*.

The portion of country on the north side of Back River, between Powhatan Creek and Mill Creek, which enters the Back River from the north at the lower end of the island, was called the *Neck of Land*.

The country down the river, between Mill Creek and Archer's Hope Creek, was called *Archer's Hope*.

On the other side of the river a creek known as Gray's Creek cut off *Swan's Point*. The early settlements in that region were called the *Plantations Across the Water*. Here the poet George Sandys, treasurer of the colony, had a plantation in 1625.

Further up the river on the same side were *Four Mile Tree* and *Pace's Pains*.

And down the river nearly opposite to Archer's Hope was *Hog Island*.

III.

THE ENGLISH AT JAMESTOWN.

IT was an utterance of the wise Sir Francis Bacon that "as in the arts and sciences the first invention is of more consequence than all the improvements afterwards," so "in kingdoms the first foundation or plantation is of more noble dignity and merit than all that followeth." Jamestown has the glory of being the first permanent English settlement in America, and as such was the Cradle of the Republic of the United States. Had the expedition sent out from London in 1606 failed of a permanent footing on these shores, the opportunity of establishing here an Anglo-Saxon colony might have passed away never to return. The Spaniards, who claimed all North America, might have, by establishing settlements of their own, prevented any further attempt on the part of the English.

Hence it is, that while Jamestown was never anything more than a mere village, its history as "the first plantation" and "the first colonial invention" must give it paramount interest in the history of the United States. To the philosophic historian who can appreciate the meaning of Bacon, the three small ships which bore the first settlers to the shores of the island—the *Sarah Constant,* the *Goodspeed* and the *Discovery*—are invested with tenfold more interest than the proudest iron-clad squadron that sails the seas to-day. Here were the first trial by jury, the first English church, the first English marriage, the first birth of an English child in Virginia, and the first legislative assembly in America.

"Here," in the eloquent language of Henry A. Wise, of Virginia, "the old world first met the new. Here the white man first met the red for settlement and civilization. Here the white man first wielded the axe to cut the *first tree* for the *first log cabin.* Here the *first log cabin* was built for the *first village.* Here the

first village rose to be the *first State* capital. Here was the *first capital* of our empire of States—here was the very foundation of a nation of freemen, which has stretched its dominion and its millions across the continent to the shores of another ocean. Go to the Pacific now to measure the progression and power of a great people!"

Dr. Alexander Brown graphically says: "Virginia was the mother of the English colonies in America, and the city of London was the mother of Virginia. London was the great heart, and Old Father Thames the great artery of England." The great Queen Elizabeth and her sea-kings, Drake, Hawkins, Gilbert, Raleigh and others, stood sponsors at the baptism of the new realm. The defeat of the Invincible Armada by Sir Francis Drake and Sir John Hawkins was the opening event in the history of the United States. A passage through the Spanish power to the western continent was not, however, finally attained till 1596, when Raleigh, with the Earl of Essex and Lord Thomas Howard, destroyed the Spanish fleet in a great battle before Cadiz. Several attempts were made by Sir Walter to colonize Virginia, and in spite of his failure he never lost heart. In 1602, he wrote to Sir Robert Cecil in regard to Virginia, "I shall yet live to see it an English nation." It was only four years after this declaration that James I. issued the charter under which England's first permanent colony was established.

Among the influential men who assisted in putting the colony on its feet were Robert Cecil, Earl of Salisbury, the Secretary of State; Sir John Popham, Lord Chief Justice; Henry Wriothesley, Earl of Southampton; Sir Ferdinando Gorges, Richard Hackluyt, the geographer; Sir Thomas Smith, the eminent London merchant; Sir Thomas Gates, who had been selected as land officer in the Drake-Sidney voyage to America (1585-'86); Sir George Somers, a member of Parliament (who had served under Raleigh), Captain Edward Maria Wingfield (who had served in the Low Countries war against Spain), Captain John Smith, whose reputation for adventure in Europe pointed him out as a man fitted to incur dangerous responsibilities in America, and Captain Christopher Newport, destined to be admiral of the first fleet to Virginia.

On Saturday, December 20, 1606, three small vessels, the

Sarah Constant, of one hundred tons burden, commanded by the Admiral Christopher Newport, a sailor famed in the wars with Spain; the *Goodspeed*, of forty tons, Captain Bartholomew Gosnold, vice-admiral, and the *Discovery*, of twenty tons, Captain John Ratcliffe, sailed from London with one hundred and sixty souls, adventurers and mariners. They had elaborate instructions from His Majesty King James, and from His Majesty's Council for Virginia, and among the orders was one that they should make their settlement some one hundred miles inland, so as to be freer from the attack of the Spaniard.

Proceeding by way of the West Indies, the voyagers passed within the Virginia capes on April 26, 1607. Here they anchored, and, landing at Cape Henry, they set up a cross on April 29th. The next day they visited the Indian town of Kecoughtan, near where Hampton is now located. Manning their "shallop," Captain Newport and some of the settlers coasted up the river as far as the Appomattox. On May 12th, on their way back to the ships, they discovered a point of land which they called Archer's Hope, named, it is believed, in honor of Captain Gabriel Archer, and "if it had not been disliked because the ships could not ride neare the shore we had settled there to all the colonies contentment." On the next day the ships came up the river past Archer's Hope to the spot selected for their resting-place in the Paspahegh country, some four miles from Archer's Hope, where, by the depth of the water, they were enabled to lie so near the shore as to moor their ships to the trees. On May 14th (May 24th, new style), "we landed all our men, which were set to work about the fortification, and others, some to watch and ward as it were convenient."

Here, then, on May 14th (May 24th, new style) was the beginning of the settlement at Jamestown.

The colonists were at first in high hopes. All nature seemed to welcome them to their new home. The great trees had put on their deepest green. The ground was carpeted with many flowers of many dyes and hues. The air was sweet with perfume, and the song of the mocking-bird bathed the island in delicious music.

The names of the first settlers at Jamestown Island, as far as preserved by Captain John Smith, were as follows:

"*Councell.*

Mr. Edward Maria Wingfield
Captaine Batholomew Gosnoll
Captaine John Smith
Captaine John Ratcliffe
Captaine John Martin
Captaine George Kendall

Gentlemen

Mr. Robert Hunt, Preacher
Mr. George Percie
Anthony Gosnoll
George Flower
Captaine Gabriel Archer
Robert Fenton
Robert Ford
William Bruster
Edward Harrington
Dru(e) Pickhouse
Thomas Jacob
John Brookes
Ellis Kingston
Thomas Sands
Benjamin Beast
Jehu Robinson
Thomas Mouton
Eustace Clovill
Stephen Halthrop
Kellam Throgmorton
Edward Morish
Nathaniell Powell
Edward Browne
Robert Behethland
John Penington
Jeremy Alicock
George Walker
Thomas Studley
Richard Crofts
Nicholas Houlgrave
Thomas Webbe
John Waller
John Short
William Tankard
William Smethes
Francis Snarsbrough
Richard Simons
Edward Brookes
Richard Dixon
John Martin
Roger Cooke
Anthony Gosnold
Thomas Wotton, *Chirurg.*
John Stevenson
Thomas Gore
Henry Adling
Francis Midwinter
Richard Frith

Carpenters

William Laxon
Edward Pising
Thomas Emry
Robert Small

Labourers

John Laydon
William Cassen
George Cassen
Thomas Cassen
William Rodes
William White
Old Edward
Henry Tavin
George Goulding
John Dods
William Johnson
William Vnger
Jam: Read, *Blacksmith*
Jonas Profit, *Sailer*
Thomas Cowper, *Barber.*
Wil Garret, *Bricklayer*
Edward Brinto, *Mason*
William Loue, *Taylor*
Nic: Scott, *Drum*
Wil: Wilkinson, *Chirurg.*
Samuel Collier, *boy*
Nat Pecock, *boy*
James Brumfield, *boy*
Richard Mutton, *boy*

With divers others to the number of one hundred." (The total number left at the Island on June 22, 1607, was 104.)

The settlement was made on the high ground at the upper end of the island. Here the channel ran close to the land, enabling the settlers to moor their ships to the trees on the shore in "six fathom water." The land was then covered with a dense growth of pine, gum, hickory and oak. The first work undertaken after the English had secured a footing in the island was to cut down the trees, and to clear a spot for the fort, a precaution which their situation made important. By the 15th of June the fort was completed. It was triangle-wise, and the sides were protected by palisades.

Within the fort on each side, at an equal distance from the palisades, was "a settled street of houses, running along so as each line of the angle had its street." These "houses," so-called, were mere cabins covered with clapboard and thatched with reeds, and so frail that they needed constant repairing to keep out the wind and weather.

Soon after their arrival, the colonists planted in the cleared ground about the fort on "two little mountains," meaning rising ground, the English wheat which was brought over by the fleet. By June the 15th it had sprung a man's height from the ground.

But the hopes entertained at their first arrival were destined to be short-lived. The first summer was one of great suffering at Jamestown. The provisions which the colonists had brought with them were much injured by the long trip at sea, and starvation, sickness, Indian attack, and local discord soon reduced their number from one hundred and four, the number first left behind on the island, to forty only.

With the approach of fall the condition of things became better. The Indians ceased their war, the air grew salubrious, and the river became filled with ducks and geese, which afforded a good entertainment to the survivors.

On January 7, 1608, three days after the arrival of the "First Supply," Jamestown was accidentally burned. The fire consumed nearly all the buildings in the fort, including the library of Mr. Hunt, the minister, the church, the store-house for provisions, and the store-house for ammunition.

By the labor of Captain Newport and his mariners the town was restored during the winter, and when the spring advanced, further repairs were made on the palisades, church and store-

house by Master Scrivener and Captain John Smith, of the Council. After Smith's election to the presidency on September 10, 1608, these works were renewed, besides other improvements.

After this Captain Newport arrived with the Second Supply, in October, 1608.

During the spring of the succeeding year, 1609, we hear of a well of "excellent sweet water" made in the fort. Till then dependence had been had upon the water of the river, which, during the summer months, was often brackish and very unwholesome. Some twenty new houses were built, the church re-covered, and a block-house raised "in the neck of our isle, kept by a garrison to entertain the salvages trade and none to passe nor repasse, salvage or christian, without the president's order." Captain Smith said that at the time he left the colony, about October 5, 1609, Jamestown "was strongly palisaded, and contained fifty or sixty houses." But most of these houses had been, doubtless, put up by the new arrivals, in number about two hundred men, women and children, part of the expedition under Sir Thomas Gates, which constituted the Third Supply.

These new-comers had arrived in a deplorable condition. They had been separated in a storm from the *Sea Venture,* bearing their commanders, Sir Thomas Gates and Sir George Somers. Their supplies had been ruined by the rain, and the plague and the yellow fever were raging among them. Then ensued the period called the "Starving Time," during which the number of colonists at Jamestown was reduced from four hundred to only sixty survivors. When at length Sir Thomas Gates, with one hundred and forty emigrants, was able, after an enforced absence for forty-two weeks in the Bermudas, on which the *Sea Venture* had been wrecked, to reach the point of his destination, May 23, 1610, he found Jamestown "rather as a ruin of some ancient fortification than that any person living might now inhabit; the palisadoes tourn down, the portes open, the gates from the hinges, the church ruined and unfrequented, empty houses whose owners' untimely death had taken newly from them, rent up and burnt, the living not able as they pretended to step into woods to gather other fire-wood, and it is true the Indians as fast killing without as the famine and pestilence within. Only the block-house somewhat regarded was the safetie of the remainder that lived."

Governor Gates cast anchor before Jamestown on Wednesday, May 23, 1610. He landed and visited the church, caused the bell to be rung, at which all who were able repaired to the same and listened to a zealous and sorrowful prayer from the new minister, Rev. Richard Buck, who came with Gates.

After consultation with his Council on or before June 1st, Governor Gates reached the conclusion that there was no way before him save to abandon the colony. He accordingly caused all the small arms to be carried aboard, buried the cannon of the fort at the Fort Gate, and on June 7th commanded every man at the beating of the drum to repair aboard. And because he did not think it right to burn the town, which some intemperate and malicious people threatened, he caused his own company, which he had brought from the Netherlands under the command of Captain George Yeardley, to embark after the rest, and was himself the last to go aboard.

That night the ships fell down with the tide to Hog Island, and the next morning the tide brought them to Mulberry Island, where they met the *Virginia*, in which Lord Delaware, who had arrived with his fleet at Point Comfort, had sent Captain Edward Brewster with letters to Sir Thomas Gates, commanding him to return to Jamestown.

"And Gates the next morning, to the great grief of all his company (only except Captain John Martin), as wind and weather gave leave, returned his whole company with charge to take possession again of those poor ruinated habitations at Jamestown, which he had formerly abandoned. Himself in a boat proceeded down to meet His Lordship, who making all speed up, arrived shortly after at Jamestown."

Lord Delaware's commission as Lord Governor and Captain General, during the term of his natural life, with principal authority, both by land and sea, over the said colony, etc., was sealed by His Majesty's Council for the company on February 28, 1610. He brought with him "a hundred old soldiers, good people, and a few knights." Lord Delaware reached Jamestown with his ships on Sunday, June 10, 1610, and in the afternoon went ashore with Sir Ferdinando Weyman, landing at the south gate of the palisades fronting the river; Sir Thomas Gates caused his company in arms to stand in order and make a guard,

William Strachey, acting on this special occasion as color-bearer.

As soon as the Lord Governor landed he fell upon his knees before them all and made a long and silent prayer to God. Then arising he marched up into the town, Strachey bowing with his colors; and as they entered the gate they fell at his Lordship's feet who passed on to the chapel, where he heard a sermon from Rev. Richard Buck ("Sir Thomas Gates his preacher"). After that Lord Delaware caused his ensign, Anthony Scott, to read his commission, which entitled him Lord Governor and Captain General, during his life, of the colony and plantation in Virginia ("Sir Thomas Gates our Governor hitherto, being now styled therein Lieutenant General"), upon which Sir Thomas Gates delivered up to his Lordship "his owne commission, both patents, and the Counsell seale."

The Lord Governor then uttered some few words of reproach, warning, and advice and cheer.

Lord Delaware had the sorry settlement cleansed, the church repaired and the houses made once more warm and defensive against "wind and weather." Their roofs were covered with boards, and the sides of some with Indian mats. During the winter which succeeded the colonists lived in tolerable comfort, and having abundance of good wood near the fort, they maintained large fires; and as Strachey, the secretary of Lord Delaware said, although they had no "wanton city ornaments"—

> "We dwell not here to build us bowers,
> And Halls for pleasure and good cheer,
> But Halls we build for us and ours
> To dwell in them while we live here."

The fort was newly palisaded with strong plank and posts, "the latter being set four foot deep in the ground." Despite, however, Strachey's favorable picture, the buildings at this period must have been very frail, since the very next year, when Sir Thomas Dale arrived, May 19, 1611, Lord Delaware having in the meantime returned to England, extensive repairs were again necessary.

"May 20th Deputy-Governor Dale held a consultation with his Council, and they decided at once to repair the church and storehouse, to build a stable for their horses, a munition house, a

powder house and sturgeon dressing house; to dig a new well; to make brick; to raise a block-house on the north side of the Back River in order to prevent the Indians from killing the cattle; a house to store hay in and lodge the cattle in winter, and to perfect a smith's forge; besides private gardens for each man, public gardens for hemp and flax, and such other seeds; and lastly a bridge to land the goods dry and safe upon. Captain Edward Brewster with his gang was to repair the church, etc.; Captain Lawson with his gang to build the stable, and Captain Newport with his mariners undertook the bridge."

In August following Dale's arrival, Sir Thomas Gates came in, bringing his daughters and many immigrants, nearly all artisans—workers in iron, builders of ships, mill-wrights for water-mills, agriculturists, brick-makers and bricklayers, fishermen, carpenters, smiths, etc.

Under the commission from Lord Delaware, Gates became the chief of the colony in the place of Dale, who was sent with the majority of the colonists to build a new town near the falls, to be called Henrico, in honor of the noble Prince Henry, "whose royal heart was ever strongly affected to that action."

Gates remained at Jamestown with the rest of the company, whom he kept working at the place, till by "his care and providence," he succeeded in reducing it to a "handsome Forme." Ralph Hamor, who succeeded William Strachey as secretary, described it as follows in 1615: "It hath in it two faire rows of houses, all of framed timber, two stories and an upper garrett or corne loft, high, besides three large and substantial store-houses joyned together, in length some hundred and twenty foot and in breadth forty. This town hath been lately newly and strongly impaled, and a fair platforme in the west Bulwarke raised. There are also without this town in the Island some very pleasant and beautiful houses, two block-houses (to observe and watch lest the Indians at any time should Swim over the Back River and come into the Island) and certain other farm-houses. The command and government of this town hath master John Sharpe liftenant to Capt. Francis West, brother to the right honorable the Lord Lawarr."

A year later John Rolfe, who was Hamor's successor in the office of Secretary of State, wrote that at Jamestown there were about sixty persons under the command of Lieutenant John

Sharpe, in the absence of Captain Francis West, "whereof thirty one are farmers;" that "they all maintained themselves with food and raiment;" and that the minister there was Rev. Richard Buck, "a verie good preacher."

In May, 1616, Sir George Yeardley, who, like Gates and Dale, had been an officer in the Low Countries, became Deputy-Governor for Lord Delaware. During his brief administration of a year "the colony lived in the peace and best plenty that it had ever had until that time," and was "well stored with corn in all parts." Nevertheless, Yeardley seemed to realize more clearly than any of the early governors the important part tobacco was destined to play in the development of Virginia. He encouraged its growth even at the expense of Jamestown. When Argall displaced Yeardley in May, 1617, he found Jamestown in a state of perfect neglect. The people were everywhere dispersed, seeking the best spots for the culture of tobacco. At Jamestown, the market place, streets and all other spare places were set with this plant. He found the church down, the palisades broken, the bridge in pieces, the well of fresh water spoiled, the store-house being used for the church, and not over five or six houses in Jamestown habitable.

This condition seemed shocking to Argall, but the fact was that thus early had the economic destiny of Virginia asserted itself. It seems doubtful in view of all the calamities which the settlers were compelled to undergo whether the London Company could have succeeded in making a permanent settlement in Virginia without the aid of this seductive weed; and in the very outset, the cultivation of this staple declared its antagonism to towns and cities.

Tobacco was then sometimes sold in England as high as ten shillings a pound, a sum equal in our present money to $12.50, an enormous figure compared with our present market price of seven cents. Argall now began the foolish policy which so long prevailed. He attempted to overturn nature's decree by making one of his own, and by way of discouraging the raising of tobacco he issued a proclamation fixing the price at three shillings a pound.

As for Jamestown, Argall restored it once more, repaired the church and the cottages, and made William Powell "Lieutenant-

Governor and Commander of Jamestown, the block-houses, and the people there."

Argall, in a proclamation dated April 7, 1619, declared that the corporation and parish of Jamestown included, besides the island, the country in the north side of James River east of Argall's town, the Neck of Land on the north of Back River, and Archer's Hope; and on the south side, Hog Island, and the Tappahanna country as far as the Four Mile Tree.

But Argall did little more at Jamestown than to repair the buildings which he found in place, and we are told that when Sir George Yeardley returned with the full title of Governor and Captain-General of Virginia two years later, he found in James City "only those houses that Sir Thomas Gates built in the time of his government. There were, to be sure, the Governor's house, which Argall had enlarged, and a church of timber fifty feet in length and twenty in breadth," built during the course of his brief administration "wholly at the charge of the inhabitants of Jamestown."

Not only was Jamestown in a state of decay, but Henrico also, and the other settlements. There had been at Henrico a large number of houses, but all of them had gone to ruin. The wooden church at that place was in the last stage of dilapidation. The houses at Coxendale, Arahateck and Charles City were all to pieces. The forts at Jamestown and the other settlements—Henrico, Charles City, Charles Hundred, Shirley Hundred, Arahateck, Martin Brandon, and Kecoughtan—were poorly housed and ill fortified. The guns at Jamestown consisted of "two demiculverins mounted upon rotten carriages, fitter to shoot down our houses than to offend an ennemie." Such was the testimony of the General Assembly in 1624 on the condition of things in 1619, and it was a just commentary on the results of martial law which was enforced by Sir Thomas Dale and Sir Samuel Argall especially with merciless severity.

The year 1619 witnessed the beginning of a new era in Virginia. A complete change in the methods of government was inaugurated. During the whole period from 1607 to 1619 the colony had been administered under the martial law. The only alteration which had really taken place after the charter of 1609, was the transfer of authority from the Council, whose members

were forever at war with one another, to an absolute governor. In some respects, the alteration was for the worse, since the tyranny of the President of the Council had been in a degree restrained by the jealousy of his fellow-members, whereas there was no influence of any kind to operate upon the arbitrary actions of Sir Thomas Gates, Sir Thomas Dale, and Sir Samuel Argall—three men characterized by the united voice of the people of Virginia in 1624 as tyrants of the most ultra type.

During the latter period, there was far more vigor of action, because far more unity of purpose; but the results achieved were steeped in the tears and blood of the settlers and appear to have had no great permanent value. In less than three years after Dale left Virginia, Henrico and Bermuda, two places colonized by him, under a system of more than "Scythian cruelty," were almost in ruins. Dale, who drove the people into rebellion by his arbitrary rule, afterwards, like other tyrants have done, justified his rule by that very rebellion.

In 1619, the period of the "Joint Stock" at last expired, and the London Company, which had continued the system with its military government, seven years longer than was at first published in the King's instructions, had to establish some new form of government. Sir George Yeardley arrived in April, 1619, with commissions and instructions "for the better establishment of a Commonwealth here." He made proclamation that "those cruel laws by which we, the ancient planters, had been so long governed were now abrogated, and we were to be governed by those free laws which his Majesty's subjects lived under in England." He began at once a distribution of lands among the old settlers, awarding to each one hundred acres, and one hundred acres for every share of money (twelve pounds and ten shillings) advanced by any adventurer in England or Virginia, with the promise of one hundred acres more. He called upon the people to elect an assembly, and on July 30, 1619, the first free legislative body ever convened on the American continent met in the church at Jamestown. A college and a free school were in contemplation, and settlers flocked to Virginia by hundreds.

In August, 1619, the *Treasurer*, a ship belonging to Captain Argall, and a Dutch man-of-war, which had been engaged together in robbing the Spanish plantations in the West Indies,

arrived with some stolen negro slaves, twenty of whom they sold to the people at Jamestown. This was the beginning of African slavery in the United States.

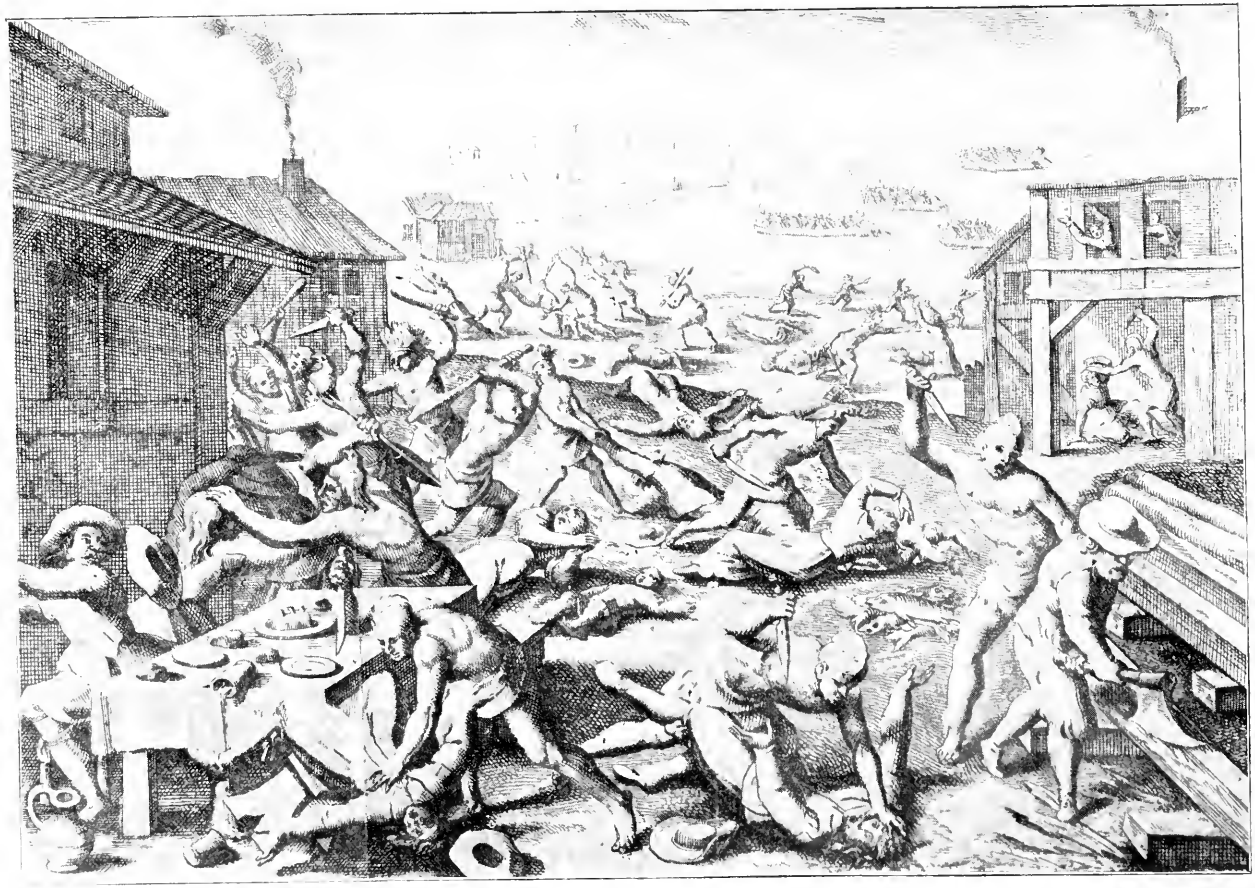
Sir George Yeardley, under instructions from the London Company, drew the settlements together into four great corporations, of which Jamestown, Charles City, Henrico and Kecoughtan were the capital cities, and proceeded to rebuild the ruined settlements.

In October, 1621, he was succeeded by Sir Francis Wyatt, a man of similar liberal temperament, who continued the good work; but the extraordinary sickliness of the colony during the next three years (1621 to 1624) and the mortality occasioned by an Indian massacre operated, of course, as a great hindrance to their labors, while it encouraged their enemies in England to attack the new administration of the London Company under Sir Edwin Sandys, Nicholas Ferrar and Henry Wriothesley, Earl of Southampton. For, after all, the mischievous government to which the Virginians had been subjected till 1619 was not the chief trouble which the colonists experienced. It had been the policy of the London Company to minimize the evils of climate and Indian attack and to throw the blame on the colonists themselves. Virginia had to be "boomed" at all costs, and so the country had been represented as a paradise for health, and the Indians as gentle as doves. According to report, it was always some factious intriguers or the worthlessness of many among the settlers that brought the calamities. This is the way that Captain Smith puts it.

But the silent and overwhelming refutation is found in the numbers that laid down their lives in Virginia for the founding of the State. Out of a total of fourteen thousand emigrants, from 1607 to 1622, only twelve hundred and fifty-eight were surviving at the time of the massacre in the latter year.

The upturning of the virgin soil in Virginia let loose the miasma of centuries, and the poor settlers, having no medicines to combat with the diseases, perished by thousands.

The Indian massacre which happened in 1622 reduced the number of actual settlers in Virginia from twelve hundred and fifty-eight to nine hundred and eleven, and if it did not justify, it seemed at least to excuse the action of the King in putting an



THE MASSACRE IN 1622.

[From a cut in the *Schceps-Togt van Anthony Chester Na Virginia, gedaan in het jaar 1620.* Printed at Leyden by Peter Vander, 1707. A pamphlet, 12mo.]

end to the company, and nominally assuming the government to himself, which he actually did in 1624.

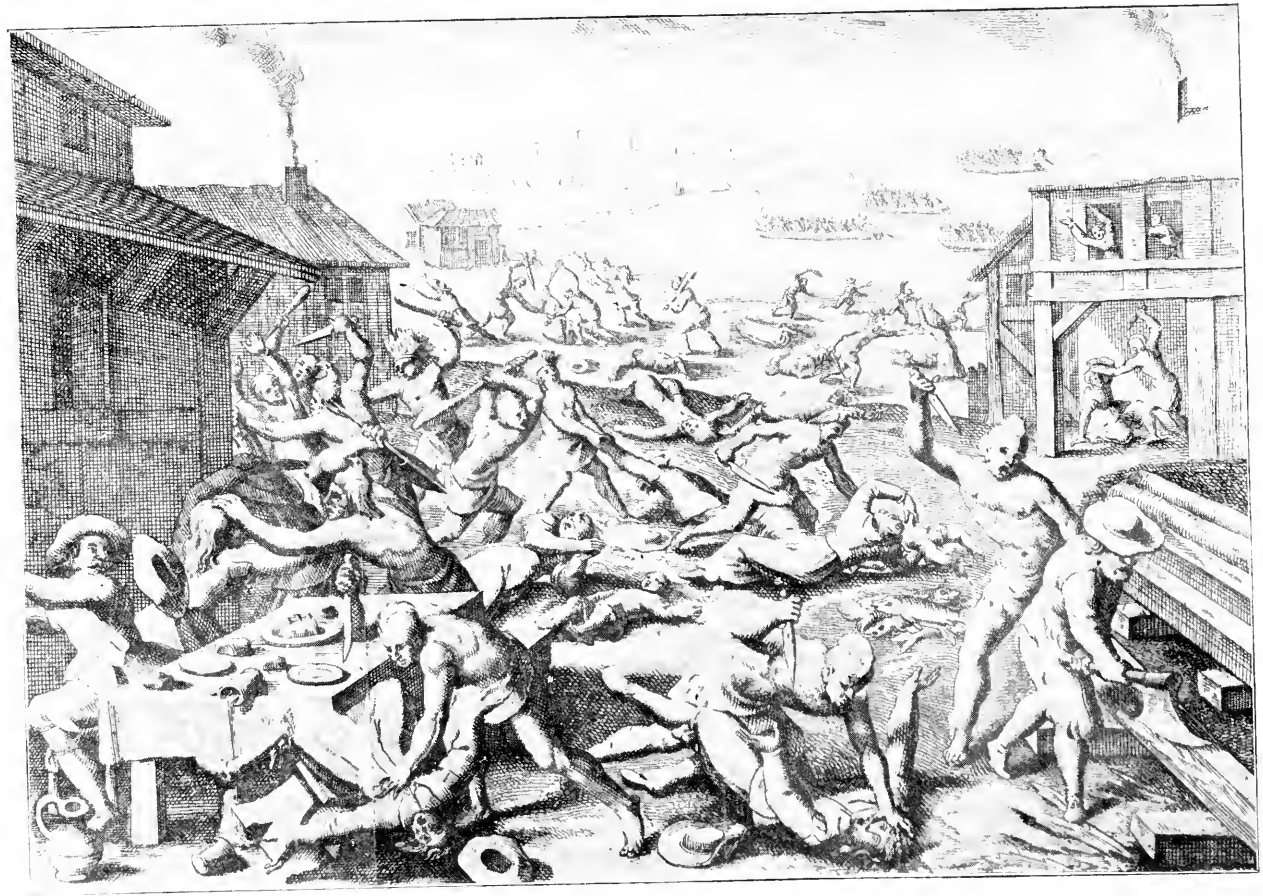
Jamestown was fortunate enough to receive warning of the impending massacre through Mr. Richard Pace, and no one there suffered death from the Indians in 1622.

There is preserved a great mass of information regarding the condition of things in Virginia after the Indian massacre. The unfavorable side is shown in a pamphlet written by Captain Nathaniel Butler, called "The Unmasking of Virginia," which was written with an evidently hostile intent to cast discredit on Sandys, Ferrar and the Earl of Southampton, heads of the company's affairs in London.

Governor Wyatt and the leading planters and friends of Virginia came to the rescue and answered his calumnies. To the charge of Captain Butler, that the best houses in Virginia were no better than "the meanest cottages in England," they replied that the houses during the misery of the government of Sir Thomas Smith might have answered this description, but that at this present time there were four houses for every one then existing, and these were in goodness forty times superior. Said the Rev. William Mease and others: "So far are the houses in Virginia from being so meane as they are reported, that throughout his majesty's dominions here (in England) all laboring men's houses (w^{ch} wee chiefly p'fess ourselves to be) are in no wise generally for goodness to be compared with them. And for the houses of men of better ranke and quality they are so much better and convenyent y^{t} noe man of quality without blushing can make exception against them."

As for Jamestown, the census taken in 1625 gives the following particulars: There were at this time in Jamestown twenty-two dwellings, besides one church, one merchant's store, three storehouses, and one large court of guard (guard house). This probably did not include the houses in the island outside of the immediate precincts of the town.

The number of inhabitants on the island and in the immediate neighborhood was as follows: Jamestown, one hundred and eighty-two persons, including three negroes; the island outside, thirty-nine; the Main, eighty-eight; the Neck of Land, twenty-five; the Glass-house, five; Archer's Hope, fourteen—total, three hundred and fifty-three.



THE MASSACRE IN 1622.

[From a cut in the *Scheeps-Togt van Anthony Chester Na Virginia, gedaan in het jaar 1620.* Printed at Leyden by Peter Vander, 1707. A pamphlet, 12mo.]

end to the company, and nominally assuming the government to himself, which he actually did in 1624.

Jamestown was fortunate enough to receive warning of the impending massacre through Mr. Richard Pace, and no one there suffered death from the Indians in 1622.

There is preserved a great mass of information regarding the condition of things in Virginia after the Indian massacre. The unfavorable side is shown in a pamphlet written by Captain Nathaniel Butler, called "The Unmasking of Virginia," which was written with an evidently hostile intent to cast discredit on Sandys, Ferrar and the Earl of Southampton, heads of the company's affairs in London.

Governor Wyatt and the leading planters and friends of Virginia came to the rescue and answered his calumnies. To the charge of Captain Butler, that the best houses in Virginia were no better than "the meanest cottages in England," they replied that the houses during the misery of the government of Sir Thomas Smith might have answered this description, but that at this present time there were four houses for every one then existing, and these were in goodness forty times superior. Said the Rev. William Mease and others: "So far are the houses in Virginia from being so meane as they are reported, that throughout his majesty's dominions here (in England) all laboring men's houses (w^{ch} wee chiefly p'fess ourselves to be) are in no wise generally for goodness to be compared with them. And for the houses of men of better ranke and quality they are so much better and convenyent y^{t} noe man of quality without blushing can make exception against them."

As for Jamestown, the census taken in 1625 gives the following particulars: There were at this time in Jamestown twenty-two dwellings, besides one church, one merchant's store, three storehouses, and one large court of guard (guard house). This probably did not include the houses in the island outside of the immediate precincts of the town.

The number of inhabitants on the island and in the immediate neighborhood was as follows: Jamestown, one hundred and eighty-two persons, including three negroes; the island outside, thirty-nine; the Main, eighty-eight; the Neck of Land, twenty-five; the Glass-house, five; Archer's Hope, fourteen—total, three hundred and fifty-three.

The names of the people resident on the island were as follows:

JAMESTOWN.

"Sir Francis Wyatt, Governor,
Margaret, Lady Wyatt
Hawt Wyatt, Minister
Kathren Spencer
Thomas Hooker
John Gather
John Matheman
Edward Cooke
George Nelson
George Hall
Jane Burtt
Elizabeth Pomell
Mary Woodward

Sir George Yeardly, Knight
Temperance, Lady Yeardly
Argall Yeardly
Frances Yeardly
Elizabeth Yeardly
Kilibett Hicheocke
Austen Combes
John Foster
Richard Arrundell
Susan Hall
Ann Grimes
Elizabeth Lyon
Yomge
——— Negroe } Women
——— Negroe }

Alice Davidson—vid
Edward Sharpless
Jone Davies
George Sands, Treasurer
Captain William Pierce
Jone Pierce
Robert Hedges
Hugh Wms. (Williams)
Thomas Moulston
Henry Farmor
John Lightfoote
Thomas Smith
Roger Ruese
Allexander Gill
John Cartwright,
Robert Austine
Edward Brieke
William Ravenett
Jocomb Andrews
vx Andrews
Richard Alder
Ester Evere
Angello A Negar

Doct. John Pott
Elizabeth Pott
Richard Townsend
Thomas Leister
John Kullaway
Randall Howlett
Jane Dickenson
Fortune Taylor

Capt. Roger Smith
Mrs. Smith
Elizabeth Salter
Sarah Macocke
Elizabeth Rolfe
Chri Lawson
vxor eius Lawson
Francis Fouler
Charles Waller
Henry Booth

Capt. Ralph Hamor
Mrs. Hamor
Jereme Clement
Elizabeth Clement
Sarah Langley
Sisley Greene
Ann Addams
Elkinton Ratcliffe
Frances Gibson
James Yemanson

John Pontes
Christopher Best
Thomas Clarke

Mr. Reignolds
Mr. Hichmore
vx Hickmore
Sarah Riddall

Edward Blaney
Edward Hudson
vx Hudson
William Hartley
John Shelley
Robert Bew
William Ward
Thomas Mentis
Robert Whitmore
Robert Chauntree
Robert Sheppard
William Sawier
Lanslott Damport
Math. Loyd
Thomas Othway
Thomas Crouch
Elizabeth Starkey
Elinor Starkey

Mrs. Perry
Infans Perry
Frances Chapman
George Graues (Graves)
vx Graues
Rebecca Snowe
Sarah Snowe
John Isgraw (Isgrave)
Mary Ascombe vid
Benony Bucke
Gercyon Bucke
Peleg Bucke
Mara Bucke
Abram Porter
Bridget Clarke
Abigall Ascombe
John Jackson
vx Jackson
Ephraim Jackson

Mr. John Burrows
Mrs. Burrows
Anthony Burrows
John Cooke
Nicholas Gouldsmith
Elias Gaill
Andrew Howell
An Ashley

John Southern
Thomas Pasmore
Andrew Ralye

Nath. Jefferys
vx. Jefferys
Thomas Hebbs

Clement Dilke
Mrs. Dilke
John Hinton

Richard Stephens
Wassell Rayner
vx. Rayner
John Jackson
Edward Price
Osten Smith
Thomas Spilman
Bryan Cawt

George Menify
Moyes Ston

Capt. Holmes
Mrs. Calcker
Mr. Calcker
infans Calcker
Peceable Sherwood
Anthony West
Henry Barker
Henry Scott
Margery Dawse

Mr. Cann
Capt. Hartt
Edward Spalding
vx. Spalding
Puer Spalding
Puella Spalding
John Helin

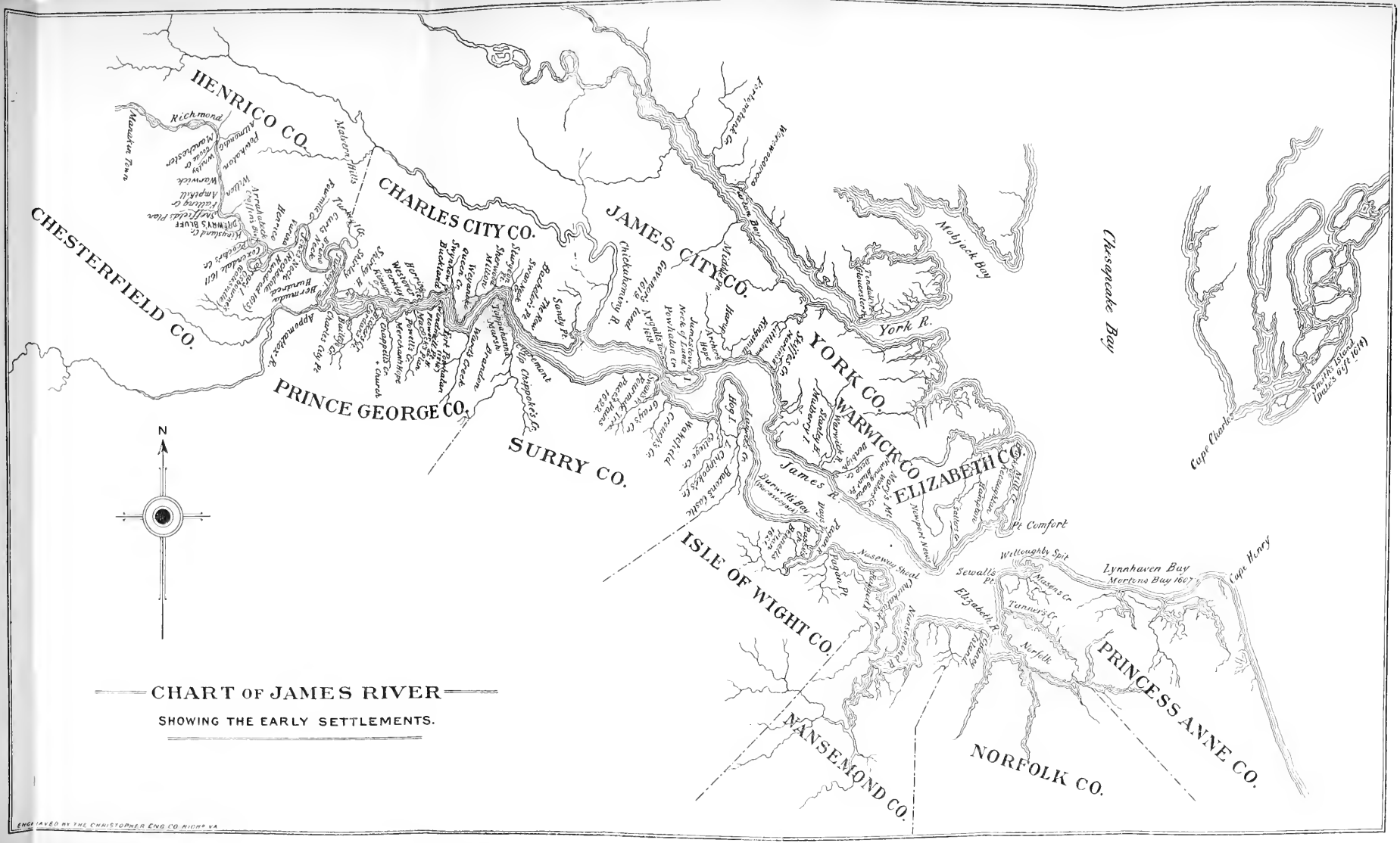
vx. Helin
puer Helin
infans Helin
Thomas Graye et vx.
Jone Graye
William Graye
Richard Younge
vx. Younge
Jone Younge
Randall Smalwood
John Greene
William Mudge
——
Mrs. Southey
Ann Southey
Elinn Painter
——
Goodman Webb

IN JAMES ISLAND.

John Osbourn
vx. Osbourn
George Pope
Robert Constable
——
William Jones
vx. Jones
John Johnson
vx. Johnson
infans
Johnson
Johnson
John Hall
vx. Hall
William Cooksey
vx. Cooksey
infans Cooksey
Alice Kean
——
Robert Fitts
Vx. Fitts
John Reddish
John Grevett.
vx. Grevett
John West
Rhomas West
Henry Glover
——
Goodman Stoiks
vx. Stoiks
infans Stoiks
Mrs. Adams
Mr. Leet
William Spence
vx. Spence
infans Spence
James Tooke
James Roberts
Anthony Harlow
——
Sarah Spence
George Shurke
John Booth
Robert Bennett."

The following description will perhaps give an idea of the place as it appeared in 1625:

The highway passed from the east end of the island over a bridge across Pitch and Tar Swamp, to the isthmus connecting the island with the Main. There was also a road that passed along the entire southern side of the island down to Goose Hill. Facing this road and beginning at a branch of Pitch and Tar Swamp was New Town. Westward of this branch the first lot was that of Captain John Harvey. It contained six and one-half acres, and ran to the Back Street, which was distant at this point from the river road twenty-six poles or one hundred and forty-three yards.


HENRICO CO.
CHARLES CITY CO.
JAMES CITY CO.
CHESTERFIELD CO.
PRINCE GEORGE CO.
SURRY CO.
YORK CO.
WARWICK CO.
ELIZABETH CITY CO.
ISLE OF WIGHT CO.
NANSEMOND CO.
NORFOLK CO.
PRINCESS ANNE CO.
Richmond
Malvern Hills
Powhatan
Manchester
Warwick
Arrahatock
Appomattox R.
Shirley H.
Westover
Merchantshope
Chappell's Ch.
Buckland
Sandy Pt.
Chickahominy R.
Governors Land
Neck of Land
Jamestown
Archers Hope
Mulberry I.
Warwick R.
Hog I.
Chuckatuck Ch.
Burwells Bay
James R.
Nansemond R.
Elizabeth R.
Pt Comfort
Willoughby Spit
Lynnhaven Bay
Mertons Bay 1607
Cape Henry
Sewalls Pt.
Mesons Cr.
Turners Cr.
Norfolk
Portsmouth
Newport News
Hampton
Mobjack Bay
York R.
Chesapeake Bay
Cape Charles
Smiths Island (Smiths gift 1614)
N
CHART OF JAMES RIVER
SHOWING THE EARLY SETTLEMENTS.
ENGRAVED BY THE CHRISTOPHER ENG. CO. RICHMOND VA.

Fold-out Placeholder

This fold-out is being digitized, and will be inserted
future date.

The western side of the lot next to him was Mr. George Menifie, an important member of the Council, who came in the summer of 1622. His lot was in area three roods and twenty poles. Separated from Menifie by a cross street was Captain Ralph Hamor, formerly Secretary of State, and still a member of the Council. His lot was an acre and a half, and like the others reached to the Back Street. It faced eleven poles on the river highway, and its east side was twenty-two poles and its west nineteen poles.

Next to Hamor was Captain Richard Stephens, whose widow, Elizabeth Piersey, married a Governor, John Harvey, just as his son's widow Frances Culpeper—I mean Samuel Stephens' widow —married another Governor, Sir William Berkeley. His lot contained sixty rods and reached back to the lot of John Chew, containing one rood and nine poles, facing upon the Back Street.

Opposite to Harvey, abutting southward upon the Back Street, about twenty-five poles for front and reaching back to a swamp, was Dr. John Pott's lot of three acres. In 1628, he extended this lot toward the Back River three hundred and eighty-five yards from the Back Street, making twelve acres.

On the west of Pott was the land of Edward Blaney, Esq. Near by was Captain Roger Smith's lot of four acres, which was bounded south upon the pale of the Governor's garden, north upon the ground of Sir George Yeardley divided by the highway, eastward upon the bridge in the said highway leading out of the island (*i. e.*, the main part of the island beyond Pitch and Tar Swamp), also upon the land of Captain William Pierce, and west upon the highway leading into the park.

Finally, in the rear of Smith, was the lot of Sir George Yeardley of seven acres, one rood, about his houses "within the precincts of James City." It abutted "northerly upon the Back River, southerly upon the ground of Captain Roger Smith and easterly upon the fence parting the same from the Main Island, and westerly upon the Park."

Sir George Yeardley was buried at Jamestown November 13, 1627, and his lot passed to Sir John Harvey. This lot is mentioned in 1640, in an order for the sale of Harvey's property at Jamestown, as "near adjoining" Harvey's original lot.

The house of William Pierce, captain of the guard at Jamestown, whose daughter, Jane, was third wife of John Rolfe, was

pronounced in 1623 by George Sandys, brother of Sir Edwin Sandys, "the fairest in Virginia." He had a room in Captain Pierce's house, in which he translated several books of Ovid's Metamorphoses, and in which he raised silk-worms. The houses at Jamestown had not the faintest resemblance to the baronial halls of England, and the church, like the houses, was of wood, and quite as plain.

The main highway of the island was three poles or nearly fifty feet wide.

The town was at the west end of the island, and the line of the Back Street is marked by an old well, scattered brick and numerous brick foundations under ground, still to be met with on the first ridge back from the river.

At the east end of the island outside of the immediate precincts of Jamestown, John Johnson had fifteen acres. West of him, separated by a marsh, John Southern, Gent., had twelve acres, between the Back River and the highway leading to Black Point. On the west of Southern was a marsh called Tucker's Hole. Southern had also twelve acres more southward of his first tract, bounded south by the land of Mary Holland, widow of Gabriel Holland, and west by the land of Thomas Passmore, carpenter, who came in the *George*.

Mary Holland had twelve acres "lately in the tenure of her former husband, William Pink, alias William Jonas." Her lot lay west of Nathaniel Hull's and east of Thomas Passmore's.

Thomas Passmore's tract of twelve acres lay "south upon the highway running close to Goose Hill," and extended east and west forty-eight poles and north and south forty poles. Near by, and south of the highway leading to Black Point, were eight acres of Richard Tree, carpenter, who "came as a freeman in the *George*, with Captain Abraham Peirsey, Cape Merchant." His neighbor on the south was Edward Grindall.

Abutting on the Main River, towards Goose Hill, were three ridges of land containing eight acres each, belonging respectively to Sir Thomas Dale, Ensign William Spencer, yeoman, "an antient planter," and John Lightfoot, also an old planter, who came in the *Sea Venture* with Sir Thomas Gates and Sir George Somers in 1610. In 1628, Robert Marshall owned ten acres between Thomas Passmore on the east and Mary Baily on the west. This

Mary Baily,[1] who was daughter and heir of John Baily, of Hog Island, had a lot of ten acres, bounding east upon a marsh towards Goose Hill, north upon a green thicket dividing the same from the land lately belonging to William Fairfax, and west upon Jenkin Andrews. William Fairfax referred to had in 1620 sold his lot to Rev. Richard Buck, together with "his house and another little house" standing upon it.

Great numbers of people after 1625 arrived from England, and a period of prosperity now dawned upon the colony. Virginia became the granary for the northern colonies. Comforts of all kinds commenced to multiply.

Pory, the speaker of the first legislature, wrote, soon after its adjournment, to Sir Dudley Carleton: "Your Lordship may know that we are not the veriest beggars in the world. One cowkeeper here in James City on Sunday goes acourtred in fresh flaming silk, and a wife of one that in England had professed the black art, not of a scholar, but of a collier of Croyden, wears her rough beaver hat with a fair pearle hat-band and a silken suite thereto corresponding." That the people had the luxury among them of good dress was shown by an act which taxed people according to the finery they wore.

By 1629, most of the land in Jamestown Island had been cleared of trees, and there were some nice garden spots in Jamestown. Thus Mrs. Jane Pierce, wife of Captain William Pierce, after passing twenty years in Virginia, returned to England and reported that she had a garden at Jamestown, containing three or four acres, where in one year she had gathered a hundred bushels of excellent figs, and that of her own provision she could keep a better house in Virginia than in London for three hundred or four hundred pounds a year, although she had gone there with little or nothing. Especially noticeable among the plants of native growth about Jamestown was a weed that acquired the name of the town itself—the celebrated "Jamestown weed," —which sprang up in the early spring in the rich ground under the shadow of the buildings. Beverley, the historian, tells a

[1] Mary Baily married Randall Holt, one of Dr. John Pott's men who came in the *George* in 1620, and was aged 18 in 1625. She heired from her father 500 acres in Hog Island. The Holts, her descendants, owned Hog Island until the nineteenth century began.

strange story of the effect eating of it had upon some soldiers of the British regiment sent over to subdue "Bacon's Rebellion." These soldiers boiled some of the new-sprouted leaves for salad, and after partaking of it turned "natural fools." It deprived them of their senses for several days, during which time they played all manner of antics, and had to be confined for fear of their doing some damage to themselves.

In 1635, there occurred at Jamestown the first rebellion in English America. On June 20, 1632, Charles I. granted to Lord Baltimore a patent for a portion of Virginia, which he named Maryland, in honor of the Queen Consort, Henrietta Maria. Sir John Harvey, the then Governor of Virginia, courted the favor of Lord Baltimore, and sympathized with him in the dispute over Kent Island and trade in the Chesapeake, and he became odious to the Virginians, whose territorial interests he thus betrayed. Accordingly, on the 28th of April, 1635, the Council arrested him for treason, and sent him to England in the custody of two members of the Assembly. This audacious act was pronounced by Charles himself as "an exercise of regal authority."

The immediate circumstances of his arrest are worth relating at some length. The people met at William Warren's house near the present Yorktown, where Captain Nicholas Martian, Captain Francis Pott and William English, the sheriff, were the chief speakers. Harvey sent and had Martian, Pott and English arrested and put in irons. When they asked the cause of their commitment, his reply was that "they should know at the gallows."

Presently the Council, being called together, he demanded that martial law be executed upon the prisoners. When the Council declined to accede to this, Harvey flew into a passion and paced for some time up and down the Council room. After a while, he took his seat, and with a frowning countenance he demanded an immediate answer to a question which he intended to propound to each of them in turn. The question, as stated by him, was: "What do you think they deserve that have gone about to persuade the people from obedience to his Majesty's substitute?"

Mr. George Menifie, to whom the question was first directed, adroitly evaded it by saying, "I am but a young lawyer, and dare

not upon the sudden deliver my opinion." The Governor required this answer to be set down in writing. When William Farrar, another member, complained of the unreasonableness of the question, Harvey, in his Majesty's name, forbade him to speak until his turn. Captain Mathews, not deterred by this, commenced with a remark similar to Farrar's, and was interrupted with the same command.

But after this, the rest of the Council began to speak, and refused to be so questioned. Thereupon, after some bitter language from Harvey, the Council adjourned. The next day there was another meeting. Harvey sternly demanded the reason of the country's opposition to him. Mr. Menifie informed him. Then Harvey, rising in a great rage, said to Menifie, "And do you say so?" He replied, "Yes." In a fury Harvey clapped Menifie on the shoulder and said, "I arrest you on suspicion of high treason to his Majesty." Captain John Utie, who was nearest, returned the blow, and said in a loud voice, "And we the like to you, sir." And thereupon the councillors crowded around Harvey and Captain Mathews, throwing his arms about him, forced him into his chair, telling him to be quiet as no harm was intended to him. In the meantime, Dr. John Pott, who stood at the door, waved his hand, and fifty armed musketeers, previously concealed, appeared. In May, an assembly was convened, which ratified the act of the Council. Captain John West, brother of the late Lord Delaware, was thereupon appointed Governor, and Harvey, as I have already stated, was soon after put aboard a ship and sent off to England.

The deposition of Sir John Harvey was the first open resistance of any colony to tyranny, and the first vindication on the American continent of the constitutional right of a people to order their own government. King Charles I., fearing the evils of the precedent, thought it necessary to reinstate Harvey for a brief period. But upon his resuming his old tyrannical behavior, he recalled him, and the mild and liberal Sir Francis Wyatt, who had already served as Governor and given satisfaction, was sent over in his stead.

Wyatt, on his arrival at Jamestown, convened the Council, consisting of some of Harvey's old enemies, who at once set about confiscating Harvey's estate at York and at Jamestown, to satisfy

the claims of Rev. Anthony Panton and of others, who had suffered from his tyrannical exactions.

I have noticed Argall's effort in 1617 to suppress the raising of tobacco, the cultivation of which was really repugnant to the growth of cities. Afterwards, the London Company organized the settlements into four great corporations with a capital city in each. The year 1623 was rendered notable as the date of the earliest order passed to compel every ship arriving in Virginia waters not to break the bulk of its cargo before reaching that place. The effect anticipated was not only that an end would be put to the habit of forestalling imported supplies, but also that the population of Jamestown would be increased owing to the extension of the opportunities of erecting store-houses and promoting trade.

But all these measures of government very early proved abortive, because against the wishes of the people in Virginia and the traders who did not care to be confined to particular ports. Notwithstanding the strict laws made to the contrary, contracts, sales, and delivery of goods before arrival at Jamestown were frequently made with planters on the way.

However, on his return as Governor the second time from England Sir John Harvey made a special effort to promote the growth of Jamestown. The Assembly which met February 20, 1637, passed an act confirmed at a subsequent session February 20, 1638, offering free a convenient proportion of ground for a house and garden to every person who should settle thereon within two years.

"Since which order," wrote Sir John Harvey in January, 1639, "there are twelve new houses built in the town, one of brick by the secretary [Richard Kempe, Esq.], the fairest that ever was known in this country for substance and importance, by whose example others have undertaken to build frame houses and beautify the place."

Harvey stated also that he and the Council, as well as the masters of ships and the ablest planters, had liberally subscribed for the erection of a brick church, and that the General Assembly had levied a tax for a State House. "There was not one foote of ground for half a mile together by the river side in Jamestown that was not taken up and undertaken to be built." Harvey

added, however, that the recent instructions permitting ships to land goods elsewhere until sufficient stores were erected at Jamestown had already operated as an immense disadvantage to his endeavors. George Menifie was sent in 1638 as agent to England to hire mechanics for the State House.

Richard Kempe's lot, referred to by Harvey, was ten poles in length towards the water side and eight poles in breadth. On his east Mr. Thomas Hill patented a lot eight poles in length and six in breadth. Richard Tree bounded him on the west. George Menifie, Esq., patented in 1640 ten poles along the water side, extending back eight poles, and his lot lay between the lands of Sir Francis Wyatt, then Governor for the second time, and that of Captain Francis Pott, brother and heir of Dr. John Pott.

In 1642, Sir William Berkeley brought with him instructions to promote the building of brick houses in the colony. The seventeenth clause of his instructions as Governor conferred upon him the power to lay out Jamestown and other towns in such manner as he and the Council might deem expedient. He might give five hundred acres of land to every person who should build a house of brick twenty-four feet long and sixteen feet broad with a cellar to it. A court-house for the Governor and Council should be built at the public charge; and "because the buildings at Jamestown were for the most part decayed and the place found to be unhealthy and inconvenient in many respects," Berkeley and his Council, with the advice of the General Assembly, were permitted to change the chief town to another place, "retaining the ancient name of Jamestown."

The General Assembly did not agree to this suggestion of change, but passed an act dated March 2, 1643, that "all undertakers who should build at James City Island" should be encouraged by a grant of land for "housing and a garden spot." Richard Sanders, Edward Challis and Radulf Spraggins each obtained an acre on the river, beginning near the block-house in the neck. John Watson secured one acre near the Brewery Point, fronting on the river six poles above the land of Colonel Thomas Stegg, and Richard Clarke one and one-half acres on Back River near Frigate Landing.

In a few years a brick church and a brick State House were among the structures at Jamestown. Besides the brick house of

Richard Kempe, there were three brick houses, joined together, belonging to Governor Berkeley. The brick was evidently obtained from the "brick kiln" on the connecting neck where Alexander Stoner, "brick-maker," patented an acre of land in 1637.

On the 17th of April, 1644, occurred the second Indian massacre. The Indians, hearing of the civil wars in England, thought the opportunity a fit one to make another attempt to exterminate the colony. They divided themselves into small companies, and on the day before Good Friday they beset the English houses a little before the break of day, and commenced to kill the settlers, and continued their bloody work for two days. About three hundred whites lost their lives. Jamestown, as in the former massacre, did not suffer.

After this, war was waged with the Indians for two years, till by the happy successes of Lieutenant Nicholas Stillwell and Captains Robert Higginson and Roger Marshall, the Indians were scattered and dispersed. In a resolute march undertaken by Sir William Berkeley in person, the grim chief Opechancanough, aged and blind, was himself captured and brought in triumph to Jamestown. Nevertheless, he retained a spirit unconquered by decrepitude of body or reverse of fortune. Hearing one day footsteps in the room where he lay, he requested his eyelids to be raised, when, perceiving a crowd of persons attracted there by curiosity to see the famous chief, he called for the Governor, and upon his appearance, said to him: "Had it been my fortune to take Sir William Berkeley prisoner, I would have disdained to make a show of him."

About a fortnight after Opechancanough's capture, one of his guards shot him in the back to revenge the death of one of his relations. Languishing awhile of the wound, he died at Jamestown, and was probably buried there.

His death brought about a peace with the Indian savages which endured for many years without much interruption.

In 1646, the General Assembly decided upon the erection of two houses at Jamestown for the manufacture of linen. They were to be built of substantial timber and were to be forty feet in length, twenty in width and eight in pitch. The roofs were to be covered with boards properly sawed and in the centre of each brick chimneys were to be placed. Each house was to be

divided with roomy and convenient partitions. The different counties were respectively requested to furnish two children, male or female, of the age of seven or eight years at least, whose parents were too poor to educate them, to be instructed in the art of carding, knitting and spinning. I have no knowledge that these houses were ever erected.

In March, 1646, to put a stop to the sale of liquors in stores on the island the privilege of retailing wines or other strong liquors was confined to licensed ordinary keepers.

There were many who applied for lots and never used them, and to prevent this interference with the growth of the town the General Assembly ordered that all persons as had built upon the lots so deserted since January, 1640, or should build upon them subsequent to that date, should be protected in their occupation. The original owner might have allotted to him instead an equal quantity of ground as conveniently near the town as he desired.

In 1649, the privilege of a market on Wednesdays and Saturdays was allowed to the inhabitants of Jamestown. The market place was bounded from the "Sandy gut, commonly called and known by the name of Peter Knight's store-house westward, and so to the gut next beyond the house of Lancelot Elay eastward, and bounded on the north side with Back River." All bonds, bills, or other writings, for anything sold in the market on a market day, were to have the force of a judgment. The Governor was to appoint the clerk, who was to keep a book and record all bonds, etc., attested by him, and he was to receive a stated fee in tobacco for his attestation.

During all the troubles in England between the Puritans and the Cavaliers, Virginia's sympathies were largely with the latter. The emigration to Virginia, however, was at first chiefly of merchants, who wanted peace and quiet. Many soldiers and officers came after the death of Charles I.; and Parliament, in the end, had to send a fleet to Virginia in order to bring the people to terms. This fleet arrived before Jamestown in April, 1652, and preparations were made by the planters to resist; but more pacific councils prevailed, and an agreement was signed by which Sir William Berkeley gave up the government, and the Virginians recognized the authority of the Commonwealth of England, but on the condition among others that "Virginians should be

free from all taxes, customs and impositions whatever, and none to be imposed upon them without consent of the General Assembly."

This claim to exemption from taxation by any other authority than that of the General Assembly of the colony had been insisted upon by Virginians as early as 1624, and was ever after stoutly maintained during the whole colonial period. In deputing the taxing power to the Federal government in 1788, Virginians were inspired by high, patriotic motives, but they little anticipated the enormous abuses to which their concession would be perverted by the Federal Congress, through unjust tariffs and unequal appropriations voted by majorities representing States of totally differing interests.

During the period from 1652 to 1660 there were three governors of Virginia—Richard Bennett, Esq., nephew of Edward Bennett, a prominent merchant of London; Edward Digges, fourth son of Sir Dudley Digges, master of the rolls to King Charles I.; and Colonel Samuel Mathews, who had long figured as a leading man in Virginia.

In March, 1660, there being no recognized authority in England, the General Assembly ventured to recall Sir William Berkeley to the governorship. Soon after, the restoration of Charles II. took place in London. The event was hailed with joy in Virginia, and on September 20, 1660, the King was proclaimed at Jamestown with every demonstration of delight.

The colony had been the asylum of many fugitive loyalists. Therefore, Colonel William Claiborne, as Secretary of State, was "fetched" in haste from West Point, where he resided, and at Jamestown music, drinking and the firing of guns were the order of the day. This is the evidence of the York county levy for 1660:

	Lbs. Tobacco.
To Edward Ramsey presst to fetch Col. Claiborne,	00100
To John Peteet, ꝑ his boat for Col. Claiborne	00100
At ye proclaming of his sacred Majesty.	
To ye Hon. Gov. a barrell powd'r 112 lbs.,	00996
To Capt. Fox for six cases of drams,	00900
To Mr. Philip Malory,	00500
To ye trumpeters,	00800
To Mr. Hansford 176 gal. syd'r at 15, and 35 gal. at 20, caske 264,	03604

In token of the loyalty, as well as the importance of the colony, Charles II. gave Virginia a new seal, which recognized her in

the cluster of his kingdom by the words, "*En dat Virginia quintum.*" England, France, Scotland and Ireland were four kingdoms to which he laid claim, and Virginia made the fifth (*Quintum regnum.*)

Charles II. made a new effort to build Jamestown. Up to this time the energies of the colony in the direction of town building had spent itself upon Jamestown Island. Charles commanded Berkeley to use his influence to induce the planters in Virginia to build a town on every important river. He was especially directed, however, to make his first essay at Jamestown. Accordingly, the Cavalier General Assembly, ever ready to gratify the Governor, passed an elaborate law upon the subject. The act itself was a significant commentary upon the attempt so long persisted in of trying to make a city of Jamestown. The place had been occupied for fifty years, and yet the provisions of the act proceeded as if the foundations of the place had yet to be laid.

That act, which was passed in December, 1662, made provision for the building of thirty-two brick houses, each to be forty feet long and twenty feet wide within the walls, which were to be two feet thick to the water table, and a brick and a half thick above the water table to the roof, the roof to be fifteen feet pitch, and to be covered with slate or tile. In order to avoid the exactions of workmen, the price of bricks, the wages of laborers, and their board at the ordinaries were fixed by law. The bricks were to be statute bricks and well burned, and the price was to be one hundred and fifty pounds of tobacco per thousand. Brick-makers were to be allowed their board and six able laborers to help them, "provided at his or their charge that employ them," and wood sufficient brought in place, and were to receive for each thousand bricks, moulded and burned, forty pounds of tobacco.

In order to expedite the work, each of the seventeen counties of the colony was required to build a house, and a levy of thirty pounds per poll was laid throughout the whole country, out of which each county, or private undertaker of a house, was to receive gratis ten thousand pounds of tobacco, to assist in meeting expenses. Finally, it was ordered that no more wooden houses be built in the town, nor those standing thereafter repaired, but brick ones be erected in their stead. The town was made the

mart of the three counties of James City, Charles City, and Surry, and these counties were forbidden to send their tobacco anywhere else before shipment.

A subscription was soon after taken at Jamestown for the proposed brick houses. September 17, 1663, it was debated in the General Assembly whether it was not fit to order the townsmen to pull up all the stakes of the old wars about Jamestown, and to build no new ones in the face of the town.

On April 10, 1665, Thomas Ludwell, the secretary, wrote that in obedience to the King's instructions, "they had begun a town of brick, and had already built enough to accommodate the affairs of the country." Ludwell and the other prominent men doubtless realized the impracticability of town building in Virginia, but were too anxious for favor with the English authorities to oppose it. In the same spirit, the General Assembly acquiesced in the extensive projects proposed about this time for building court-houses, prisons, churches, public roads, forts, ware-houses, etc.; but the people at large regarded these measures in a different light. To them they only seemed to afford occasion for heavy taxes without commensurate advantage in their sparsely settled condition.

What emphasized the opposition of the people was that several of the houses erected at Jamestown were not even occupied, and soon required repairs.

On the 12th of March, 1673, the following action took place at Jamestown:

(Present) Sir William Berkley, Governor; Thomas Ludwell, Secretary; Edward Digges and Col. Nathaniel Bacon, Esquires:

Upon the Peticon of the severall inhabitants of James City Island, it is ordered that all the marsh land unpatented in James City Island forever hereafter be and remain in common for a pasture to the use of those who now or shall hereafter live in the said Island or towne.

It appears from this order that there was no town government in Jamestown, but that, like our present city of Washington, the authorities were the general authorities of the whole country.

There are descriptions of Jamestown in 1676 from two different sources.

According to the report of the commissioners sent over to inquire into the causes of Bacon's Rebellion, Jamestown "consisted

of twelve new brick houses and a considerable number of framed houses with brick chimneys, besides a brick church and State House."

In Mrs. Ann Cotton's account of "*Bacon's Proceedings*," the island is described as follows:

"The place on which the town is built is a perfect peninsula or tract of land almost wholly encompassed with water: haveing on the south side of the river (formerly Powhatan, now called James River) three miles broad, encompassed on the north from the easte point with a deep creeke ranging in a semicircle to the west, within ten paces (50ft) of the river; and there by a small isthmus tacked to the continent. This Iseland (for so it is denominate) hath for longitude (east and west) neere upon two miles, and for latitude about half so much, bearing in the wholl compass about five miles, little more or less. It is low ground, full of marshes and swamps, which make the aire especially in the sumer insalubritious and unhealthy. It is not at all replenished with sprin.s of fresh water, and that which they have in their wells, brackish, illscented, penurious and not grateful to the stomack; which render the place improper to endure the commencement of seige. The towne is built much about the middle of the south line close upon the river, extending east and west about three-quarters of a mile; in which is Comprehended som sixteen or eighteen houses, most as is the church built of brick, faire and large: and in them about a dozen familles (for all their houses are not inhabited) getting their liveings by keeping of ordinaries, at extreordinary rates."

In two of the three best houses lived at this time Richard Lawrence, a thoughtful gentleman, who had been a student at Oxford University, and William Drummond, who had acted under Sir William Berkeley's appointment as first Governor of North Carolina. The wife of the former of these was a rich widow, who owned one of the ordinaries referred to by Mrs. Ann Cotton, and was very popular with persons of the best quality in the colony.

Troubles with the Indians had aggravated the sufferings of the people till in June, 1676, they had come together with arms for a reform in the laws. The legislature which met that month in Jamestown was compelled by the violence of Nathaniel Bacon, Jr., to correct many standing abuses. To lessen the taxes on the people of Jamestown all the freemen in the island were required to share in the cost of maintaining the burgesses for that place. The bounds of "James City" were declared "to include the whole island as far as Sandy Bay."

The people of the island for the first time were permitted to order their town government by their own suffrages; but this, with all the other laws enacted at this time, was repealed after the collapse of the revolt.

During the civil war, which began at this time, the whole town, including the new State House (the old having been burned) was destroyed by fire. Bacon set fire to the church, and Lawrence and Drummond destroyed each his own house—but the latter took the precaution to save the public records in the State House.

After the war was over the following persons were reported as the heaviest losers by the burning of Jamestown: "Colonel Thomas Swanne, who had a house burned and the goods in it; Major Theophilus Hone, who had also a house and goods destroyed by the fire; Mr. Will Sherwood and the orphan of one Mr. James, whose house was burned down by the rebel Lawrence, and the loss estimated at least at one thousand pounds sterling.

"There are divers other poor inhabitants whose ꝑticular names and losses we cannot give in, that were great sufferers by this calamity that befell James City after the Governor and his party left it."

The total loss occasioned by the fire was estimated at one hundred and fifty thousand pounds of tobacco.

At this time it seems the people of York county petitioned that the capital be established at Middle Plantation, and the General Assembly actually appears to have adopted a resolution to transfer the same to Tindall's Point (Gloucester Point). But this order was reconsidered on the advice of the Royal Commissioners, and in March, 1679, the Council ordered that "Jamestown be rebuilt and be the Metropolis of Virginia as the most ancient and convenient place." On April 25, 1679, after a session held at Greenspring, and one at Captain Otho Thorpe's house, in Middle Plantation, the General Assembly renewed its sitting at Jamestown, at the ordinary of Mr. Gauler.

In 1683, Lord Culpeper, then Governor, wrote that he had given all the encouragement possible to the rebuilding of Jamestown. His own residence was at Greenspring, but the Auditor, Nathaniel Bacon, had lately built two very good dwellings there. Colonel Joseph Bridger and Mr. William Sherwood "were going about severall which will be finished this or next yeare, and there are severall others marked out for building."

Colonel Bacon's houses appear to have been erected on a lot of three and three-eighths acres, patented by him May 29, 1683, being part of a parcel of land formerly belonging to Richard Lawrence, who "being guilty of high treason against his majesty, not daring to abide his trial, fled for the same, whereby all his goods, chattels, lands and tenements are forfeited to his Majesty." It began at the eastermost corner of ye said Lawrence's old ditch in a branch of Pitch and Tar Swamp, and was 3.93 chains west of the northeast corner of the church-yard. Here in June, 1676, at Lawrence's house, when Bacon came to attend the General Assembly after his first expedition against the Indians, he held at night a secret conference with his friends, Drummond and Lawrence. Between this lot and the church-yard was a half-acre, which had been devised to Sarah Drummond,[1] wife of William Drummond, by Edward Prescott (perhaps her father).

Above Colonel Bacon, William Edwards, clerk of the General Court, patented in 1690 "a lot of seventy-two and one-half poles, bounded from Joseph Copland's great gum on James River along his land, north four and one-half degrees, eastwardly twelve and one-half chains, then east nine-tenths of a chain to and along ye Hon'ble Nath'l Bacon, Esq., his land thirteen and two-thirds chains to ye aforementioned river," thence up the river to the great gum before mentioned. West of Colonel Bacon and north of William Edwards, Robert Beverley had a lot of three acres, one rood and six poles, which began "at the southermost end of a ditch which divides this land from the western side of the land, late of Lawrence, Colonel Bacon or one of them, at the roadside extending northwardly along the ditch thirty-six and two-fifths poles to a slash called Pitch and Tar Swamp, along up that slash till it comes to the main cart road westward."

Still further up the island, near the river, was the one-acre lot of the lawyer, William Sherwood, on which formerly stood the "Country House,"[2] sold in 1660 by the General Assembly to

[1] Sarah Drummond was no less a friend of Bacon than her husband. Picking up a small stick and breaking it, she said, "I fear the power of England no more than a broken straw."

[2] This was a house doubtless erected for the protection of the mechanics imported from England at the erection of the first State House by George Menifie, hence it was called the "Country House," *i. e.*, a house belonging to the country or colony.

Major Richard Webster, and assigned by him to Richard Ricks, who sold it to John Knowles, who sold it to Jonathan Newell, from whom it descended to his brother, David Newell, who conveyed the ruins of the house to William Sherwood, "who hath since new built a faire house and appurtenances on same."

Next to Sherwood further up, were two acres, one rood, twenty-four and one-half poles, belonging in 1688 to Henry Hartwell, Esq., embracing one-half an acre formerly belonging to Colonel William White, and later to William Edwards. This land began at a stake on the river side, and thence passed "along the angular points of a trench, which faceth two of the eastern bastions of an old ruined turf fort."

Colonel Edward Chilton in 1683 had a lot near the brick fort, and his land bounded on Sir William Berkeley's land and Colonel Philip Ludwell's.

Finally, Colonel Philip Ludwell, in 1694, patented one and one-half acres "adjoining to the ruins of the three brick houses between the State House and the Country House in James City," beginning near Pitch and Tar Swamp eight chains (two poles to a chain, *i. e.*, thirty-one feet) from the easternmost end of said houses, and running by the said end south two degrees, westerly sixteen chains. This patent proves that the new State House was further from the river than the old, which was sixty-seven feet from the high-water mark. It probably stood on the first ridge of land back from the river, and its site is now under water.

The following description of the place, written by the Rev. John Clayton in 1688, affords interesting reading:

"Even in Jamestown Island, which is much-what of an oval figure, there is a swamp runs diagonal-wise over the Island, whereby is lost at least 150 acres of land, which would be meadow, and would turn to as good account as if it were in England. Besides it is the great annoyance of the town, and no doubt but it makes it much more unhealthy. If, therefore, they but scoured the channel, and made a pretty ordinary trench all along the middle of the swamp, placed a sluce at the mouth, where it opens into the Back creek, for the mouth of the channel there is narrow, has a good hard bottom, and is not past two yards deep when the flood is out; as if nature had designed it beforehand: they might thus drain all the swamp absolutely dry, or lay it under water at their pleasure. I have talked several times hereof to Mr. Sherwood, the owner of the swamp, yet nothing is essayed in order

thereto. And now since we are speaking of Jamestown, give me leave to adjoyn some reflections as to the situation and fortifications of the place. The natural situation of the place is such, as perhaps the world has not a more commodious place for a town where all things conspire for advantage thereof.

Jamestown Island is rather a peninsula, being joyned to the continent by a small neck of land, not past twenty or thirty yards over, and which at spring tides is overflowed and is then an absolute Island. Now they have built a silly sort of a fort, that is a brick wall in the shape of a half moon, at the beginning of the swamp, because the channel of the river lies very nigh the shoar; but it is the same as if a fort were built at Chelsea to secure London from being taken by shipping. Besides ships passing up the river are secured from the guns of the fort, till they come directly over against the fort, by reason the fort stands in a vale, and all the guns directed down the river, that should play on the ships, as they are coming up the river, will lodge their shot within ten, twenty or forty yards in the rising bank, which is much above the level of the fort; so that if a ship gave but a good broadside, just when she comes to bear upon the fort, she might put the fort into that confusion, as to have free passage enough. There was indeed an old fort of earth in the town, being a sort of a tetragone, with something like bastions at the four corners, as I remember; but the channel lying further off to the middle of the river there, they let it be demolished, and built that new one spoken of, of brick, which seems little better than a blind wall, to shoot wild ducks or geese.

If they would build a fort for the security of the town and country, I conceive it should be on Archer's Hope Point, for that would stop the ships from passing up the river, before they come to the town, and would secure the town from being blocked up by Sea. The channel at Archer's Hope Point lies close by the shoar, and makes such an angle there by reason of Hog Island, that going up or down the river, let the wind be where it will, they must there bring the contrary tack on board, and generally when they about the ships, as they call it, they are so near the shoar, that a man may almost fling a stone on board. How much this hinders the motion of a ship, and what confusion it must be to them to bring a contrary tack on board, whilst they have all the guns of a fort playing so nigh upon them, may readily be conceived. Archer's Hope is a neck of land, that runs down three miles long, not much past half a mile broad betwixt the Main River and Archer's Hope Creek, which has large marshes and swamps; so that a citadel built upon the point, would almost be impregnable, being it could be attacked no way but one, which is so narrow a slender neck of land, that it would be difficult to take it that way; and it would secure Jamestown from being blocked, being it would not be past a mile by water, to the point of Jamestown Island. The Island is so surrounded with water and marshy land, that the town could never be bomb'd by land."

Colonel Philip Ludwell had the contract for the State House, and finished it in 1685.

In 1697, Dr. James Blair reported to the Lords of Trade that there were about twenty or thirty houses in Jamestown; and in September, 1698, Governor Francis Nicholson, received the accustomed instructions from England for the speedy rebuilding and enlarging of Jamestown.

But the evil genius of misfortune still pursued the unfortunate metropolis, for on October 31, 1698, the State House again fell a victim to the flames.

In 1697, the Attorney-General, Edward Chilton, had expressed the opinion that the most suitable place for the seat of government and centre of business was at the Middle Plantation, where the college was; and now Colonel Francis Nicholson, the Governor, who had ambitious notions of founding a city, carried out the idea, and removed the seat of government to Middle Plantation, whose name he changed to Williamsburg. There he began the erection of a new building, which he denominated the Capitol, after the Roman example. This was the first use of the term in America to designate the State House. The government building in Virginia has ever since retained the name of the Capitol.

Long before the removal of the Capitol to Williamsburg, the land on the island was rapidly consolidating into the hands of a few persons. About the close of the century most of the island was owned by two persons—the east end by Edward Travis, son of Edward Travis, who married the daughter of John Johnson, one of the early patentees, and William Sherwood, who married the widow of Richard James, another early patentee in the west end. The widow of the last married Edward Jaquelin, and Jaquelin's daughter by another marriage married Richard Ambler, Esq., who succeeded to the proprietorship of most of the western part, although the Ludwells continued to hold land in the island for very many years. As long as the town continued to be represented in the House of Burgesses an Ambler or a Travis nearly always represented it. By the operation of the Constitution of 1776, Jamestown lost its representative.

In 1722, Jamestown was described by Rev. Hugh Jones as amounting to "an abundance of brick rubbish, with three or four inhabited houses."

In 1781, Lord Cornwallis having defeated Lafayette at Greenspring, a few miles distant, crossed his army at Jamestown and proceeded to Portsmouth.

At this time Thatcher, in his military journal, reports two houses as standing by the river side. These must have been the houses of Colonel Champion Travis and Mr. John Ambler.

In the year 1807, the second centennial anniversary of the landing of the colonists was celebrated at Jamestown by the citizens of Williamsburg, Norfolk, Portsmouth, Hampton, Petersburg, and the surrounding country. There were present from Norfolk Captain Peter Nestell, with his volunteer State Artillery; James O'Connor, editor of the Norfolk and Portsmouth *Herald;* the talented Thomas Blanchard and his son, C. K. Blanchard; Major John Saunders, of the United States Army, stationed at Fort Nelson. From Petersburg came John D. Burke, the historian; from Williamsburg Chancellor Samuel Tyler, Bishop Madison and many others. Conspicuous among the older people were Colonel Thomas Newton, of Norfolk, Colonel Champion Travis, of Jamestown, and Colonel Wilson Miles Cary, of Ceeley's, Elizabeth City county—surviving members of the Virginia Convention of 1776, which had been the first to declare for State independence and to recommend to Congress and the other States similar action.

On the 13th day of May, the dawn was ushered in by a salute from the cannon. The eye rested on thirty-two sailing vessels in the crescent cove of Jamestown. Over four hundred ladies were present. A procession was formed to the graveyard of the old church, then represented by its solitary steeple. Here Bishop Madison delivered an eloquent prayer. After this the procession returned to the ground in front of Colonel Travis's house, where orations were delivered by Briscoe G. Baldwin and John Madison, and odes by C. K. Blanchard and Leroy Anderson[1]—all students of William and Mary College. After this, the ladies dined in the spacious rooms of the Travis mansion house, and danced the hours away in the long room by the water side.

The morning of the 14th was ushered in by cannon, and at eleven o'clock the visitors attended the funeral of a young man at the old graveyard, who had fallen a victim to the heat and "the

[1] Leroy Anderson had been the first to suggest the celebration.

too free use of ice in cyder." Next a meeting was held at which Thomas Newton presided and several resolutions were adopted looking to making the 13th of May an annual holiday for the State.

On the 15th, the pilgrims assembled in Williamsburg in the very room of the Raleigh tavern, where the Declaration of Independence had been drafted by the committee of the convention. Samuel Tyler, Chancellor of the Williamsburg District, acted as president, and James Semple as vice-president. Among the toasts drank at the banquet on this occasion was "The virtuous and enlightened, the patriotic convention of the State of Virginia, that body which with one voice dared to declare themselves independent, and to propose a similar declaration to their sister States."

After dinner a procession commenced, at the head of which were borne in triumph Colonels Cary, Newton and Travis, surviving members of the Virginia Convention.

In 1822, another celebration was held at Jamestown Island, the orators being, as on the former occasion, students of William and Mary, William Barton Rogers, Robert Saunders and Mr. McCreary, the first two of whom were afterwards distinguished professors of William and Mary.

The appearance of the place in 1837 was described by the antiquary, Mr. Richard Randolph, in the *Southern Literary Messenger:*

"The Island of Jamestown was formerly a peninsula. It was connected with the main land on the north side by a narrow Isthmus near the upper extremity of the Island. This Isthmus has long since disappeared, having been washed away by the force of the current and tides. James City (as it was called) was located on the upper part and on the south side of the Island near the banks of the river. Near the site of the town are still to be seen some of the remains of the walls and mounds of the ancient fortress of Jamestown. The fort evidently extended some distance from its present termination, but has been gradually washed away by the encroaching tides. It was mounted by several pieces of ordnance. A few hundred yards to the right of the fort stands a small brick building that tradition says was a powder magazine. Underneath this there is a cellar arched and paved with brick, in which, in all probability, the ammunition was deposited. On the north side of the house numerous impressions in the walls are plainly visible. The bricks and mortar forming the arch of the cellar

were as fresh as if they had been put up very recently. At a little distance from this house are the remains (consisting of bricks, plaster, etc.) of an apparently very large building. This was apparently the Governor's or State House. There are similar remains in other places lying on the surface of the ground in regular order in a long, narrow line, which probably indicates the direction and location of the principle streets of the town. A part of the steeple of the church, which was burned, I believe, during Bacon's rebellion, is still standing. Contiguous to the steeple there is an ancient grave yard. Several members of the Lee family of Greenspring are buried there. Their tombs are still standing, though very much injured by time. This has been a conspicuous and distinguished family from a very remote period.

"The tomb of John Ambler, who was interred here, is also standing. He was the first sole proprietor of Jamestown,[1] and erected the large brick dwelling house on the Island, which is in excellent condition, though built probably nearly a century ago. This is the only dwelling house on the Island.[2]

"Here are the tombs of several other persons eminent for talent and usefulness during the early age of the colony. They are, however, in a very ruinous and mutilated state. There is an inscription on one of the tombs recording the death of a man who died in 1670. In digging the foundation of a house in the Island some time since the workmen discovered several human skeletons. Indeed, these may be found in many places near the site of the town. Jamestown was literally the grave of the first settlers. The fatality among them, produced by famine and diseases of the climate (then much more violent than at present), was almost unprecedented. The part of the Island not embraced within the limits of a town appears to have been apportioned into numerous lots of small size, each one of which was surrounded by a dyke. Many of these ditches are still visible and plainly indicate the extent of the lots they enclosed. On some of these lots are to be found remains of buildings. On one there is an old well, the brick walls of which are quite perfect and sound.

"The greater part of the island was in possession of the Ambler family for several generations. The other portion remained for many years in possession of the Travis family. The present proprietor (Col. Goodrich Durfey) has purchased the whole Island. It is a very valuable estate, containing about 2,000 acres. The tract contains 1,200 or 1,400 acres of arable land of excellent quality. The soil is well adapted to the growth of corn, wheat, oats, and palma christi. The Island and surrounding country abound in game of almost every description—partridges, pheasants, wild turkeys, waterfowl and deer."

[1] This is a mistake. David Bullock, of Richmond, was first sole proprietor.

[2] The Travis dwelling house was burned before 1816.

In 1849 the same gentleman wrote a paper on Jamestown for the *Virginia Historical Register*. An extract from this article throws some further light upon the place:

"In October, 1660, an Act of Assembly was passed for building a State House in James City 'for the right Honorable the Governor and Council to keep courts, and for future grand assemblies to meet in.' This was accordingly erected under the superintendence of Sir William Berkeley, and a committee consisting of Col. Wm. Barber, Col. Gerard Fowke, Col. Kendall, Mr. Thomas Warren, Mr. Raleigh Travers and Mr. Thomas Lucas. It was built with bricks made in the town, or at least near it. There is good reason to believe that the State House was adjacent to Sir William Berkeley's residence and the thirty-two brick houses erected at public expense, as already mentioned. All these houses, however, with the church, which was eastward of them and a little lower down, were burnt by Richard Lawrence, one of Bacon's men, in 1676. The magazine was the only house left, and that is still standing.

"I will only add that the great body of the town, which, however, was never very large, was certainly west of the Old Steeple still visible, and is now entirely, or very nearly, submerged in the river. This is clearly proved by the old deeds for lots in the town recorded in the office of James City County Court, which call for bounds that are now under water, and more palpably, by vast numbers of broken bricks and other relics of building that may still be seen on western bank at low tide."

In 1831, the whole place had become united in the ownership of a single proprietor, Mr. David Bullock, of Richmond. In 1836 it was assessed to Colonel Goodrich Durfey, and in 1846 to John Coke, father of Hon. Richard Coke, late Senator from Texas. In 1848, it was assessed to Martha Allen Orgain, daughter of Colonel William Allen, of Claremont. In 1851, it was assessed to William Allen, her son, who by legislative enactment took the name of Allen. He was the owner of the island during the war, 1861-'65.

On the 13th of May, 1857, the two hundred and fiftieth anniversary was celebrated under the auspices of the Jamestown Society, organized in 1854 by Virginia residents in Washington. Owing to the fact that the then owner of Jamestown had devoted the land surrounding the old church to agricultural purposes, the ceremonies were held at the east end, two miles back, near the burial-ground of the Travis family. The crowd included the Governor, Henry A. Wise, and upwards of eight thousand people. The orator was Ex-President John Tyler, and the poet was

James Barron Hope. The weather was intensely dry and warm, and at night there was a great fall of rain. The celebration, however, was very imposing and successful.

During the war of 1861-'65 the island was fortified by the Confederate forces, but on their abandonment of the Peninsula, it was held by the Federal forces.

The rest of the history of the place is familiar to many. When the College of William and Mary was reorganized in 1888, the earliest celebration attempted by the faculty and students was

VIEW OF JAMESTOWN FROM THE RIVER.

[Sketched in 1857 by Miss Catherine C. Hopley, an English lady. Winsor's *Narrative and Critical History of America*, Vol. III., Part I., page 130.]

held in the very shadow of the old tower. Then followed the munificent act of Mr. and Mrs. Edward E. Barney. They presented twenty-two and one half acres of land, including the church-yard, to the Association for the Preservation of Virginia Antiquities, consisting of representative ladies of Virginia.

Among the most notable events which have happened upon the island since that time was the gathering witnessed there two years ago of the bishops of the Episcopal Church, representing the different States of the American Union.

The island is a beautiful spot, and is one of the best plantations on James River. There is now a fine artesian well affording

very pure and palatable water. Many of the swampy places have been drained, and the health of the island under present conditions is as good as that of any place in Virginia.

HISTORICAL SUMMARY.

(From the sailing of the first colony from London to the abandonment of Jamestown in 1699.)

FIRST CHARTER, APRIL 10, 1606.

December 20, 1606.—The first colony leaves London.
January 5, 1607.—They anchor at the Downs.
About February 8, 1607.—They leave the coast of England.
April 26, 1607.—They reach the Virginia coast, and the Council elect Edward Maria Wingfield first president.
May 13, 1607.—Arrival at Jamestown Island.
May 14, 1607.—Landing effected.
June 22, 1607.—Capt. Christopher Newport leaves for England.
September 10, 1607.—Wingfield deposed, and Capt. John Ratcliffe president.
January 4, 1608.—Capt. Newport arrives with the "First Supply" of men and provisions.
April 10, 1608.—Newport leaves for England.
April 20, 1608.—Arrival of Capt. Francis Nelson from the West Indies (a belated part of the First Supply).
September 10, 1608.—Ratcliffe's year expires and John Smith becomes president.
October, 1608.—Arrival of the Second Supply.
December, 1608.—First marriage in Virginia—John Laydon and Ann Burras.
December, 1608.—Return of Newport to England.
August, 1609.—Arrival of the Third Supply.
September 10, 1609.—Capt. Smith's presidency expires and Capt. George Percy made president.
———, 1609.—Virginia Laydon, the first English child born in Virginia.
October 5, 1609.—Capt. Smith returns to England.

SECOND CHARTER, MAY 23, 1609; THIRD CHARTER, MARCH 12, 1612.

May 20, 1610.—Arrival of Sir Thomas Gates, first governor, with that portion of the Third Supply which was wrecked in the Bermudas.
June 7, 1610.—The colonists abandon Jamestown.
June 10, 1610.—Lord Delaware arrives at Jamestown.
March 28, 1611.—Lord Delaware sails for England, leaving Capt. George Percy deputy-governor.
May 19, 1611.—Sir Thomas Dale arrives as deputy-governor.
August, 1611.—Sir Thomas Gates arrives as lieutenant-governor.

September, 1611.—Henrico founded.

————, 1612.—John Rolfe introduces the culture of tobacco.

Christmas, 1613.—Bermuda Hundred founded.

March, 1614.—Sir Thomas Gates returns to England, and Sir Thomas Dale acts as deputy-governor.

About April 5, 1614.—Pocahontas marries John Rolfe.

May, 1616.—Sir Thomas Dale returns to England, and Capt. George Yeardley made deputy-governor.

March 21, 1617.—Pocahontas buried in the Parish Church at Gravesend, England.

May, 1617.—Capt. Samuel Argall arrives as deputy-governor.

April, 1618.—Powhatan dies.

April 10, 1619.—Capt. Argall leaves Jamestown and Capt. Nathaniel Powell becomes deputy-governor.

April 19, 1619.—Sir George Yeardley arrives as Governor and Captain-General of Virginia.

July 30, 1619.—First Legislative Assembly.

August, 1619.—First negroes landed; African slavery introduced.

November 18, 1621.—Sir George Yeardley's term expires, and Sir Francis Wyatt becomes Governor.

March 22, 1622.—Indian massacre; 347 whites slain out of a population of 1,258.

ROYAL GOVERNMENT.

June, 1624.—Chief-Justice Ley declares the charter null and void.

May 17, 1626.—Sir Francis Wyatt sails for England, and Sir George Yeardley becomes Governor the second time.

November 13, 1627.—Sir George Yeardley buried at Jamestown, and the next day Capt. Francis West becomes acting-governor by the Council's election.

March 5, 1629.—Capt. West goes to England, and Dr. John Pott elected acting-governor by the Council.

March 24, 1630.—Sir John Harvey arrives as Governor and Captain-General of Virginia.

April 28, 1635.—Harvey deposed, and Capt. John West elected by the Council acting-governor.

January 18, 1637.—Sir John Harvey reads his commission at Elizabeth City to be Governor a second time.

November, 1639.—Sir Francis Wyatt arrives Governor.

February, 1642.—Sir William Berkeley becomes Governor.

April 17, 1644.—Second Indian massacre.

June, 1644.—Richard Kempe elected by the Council acting-governor in the absence of Governor Berkeley.

June, 1645.—Sir William Berkeley returns to Virginia.

————, 1646.—Opechancanough dies at Jamestown.

March 12, 1652.—Surrender of the colony to the Parliament.

April 30, 1652.—Richard Bennett elected Governor by the Assembly.

March 31, 1655.—Edward Digges elected Governor.

March 13, 1658.—Samuel Mathews elected Governor.
January, 1660.—Death of Mathews.
March 13, 1660.—Sir William Berkeley re-elected Governor by the Assembly.
May 8, 1660.—Charles II. proclaimed in London.
September 20, 1660.—Charles II. proclaimed in Virginia.
April 30, 1661.—Col. Francis Moryson acting-governor in the absence of Sir William Berkeley in Europe.
September–November, 1662.—Berkeley returns to Jamestown from Europe.
September 19, 1676.—Jamestown burned by Bacon.
October 1, 1676.—Nathaniel Bacon, Jr., dies.
April 27, 1677.—Berkeley leaves the country, and Col. Herbert Jeffryes becomes acting-governor.
December, 1678.—Col. Jeffryes dies, and Sir Henry Chicheley succeeds as deputy-governor.
May 2, 1680.—Lord Culpeper arrives Governor of Virginia.
August, 1680.—Lord Culpeper visits England, and Sir Henry Chicheley acts as deputy-governor.
December 16, 1682.—Lord Culpeper arrives the second time in Virginia.
September 16, 1683.—Lord Culpeper goes back to England, and Nicholas Spencer, Esq., president of the Council, acts as deputy-governor.
April 15, 1684.—Francis, Lord Howard of Effinghain, Governor.
October, 1688.—Nathaniel Bacon, president of the Council, acting-governor.
October 16, 1690.—Sir Francis Nicholson lieutenant-governor.
October 15, 1692.—Sir Edmond Andros lieutenant-governor.
October 9, 1698.—Sir Francis Nicholson lieutenant-governor till August 15, 1705.
October 31, 1698.—State House at Jamestown destroyed by fire.
April, 1699.—Act of the General Assembly for building the capitol at Williamsburg.

MEMBERS OF THE HOUSE OF BURGESSES, 1619–1776.

(Partial List.)

1619, July 31.—Capt. William Powell, Ensign William Spence.
March 5, 1624.—Richard Kingsmill, Edward Blaney.
October 16, 1629.—Richard Kingsmill, George Menifie.
March 24, 1630.—John Southerne, Robert Barrington.
February 21, 1632.—John Southerne, Lieutenant Thomas Crumpe.
September 4, 1632.—John Jackson.
February 1, 1633.[1]—John Corker, Gent.

[1] In 1634 the plantations were formed into counties, and Jamestown appears after that to have had no representative apart from James City county until 1661. But in March, 1661, the General Assembly gave Jamestown the right to elect one of itself. And this privilege was exercised down to the adoption of the State Constitution, in 1776.

June 5, 1666.—Major Theophilus Hone.
March 2, 1693.—Capt. Miles Cary.
September 24, 1696.—Philip Ludwell (William Sherwood, dead).
December 5, 1702.—Robert Beverley.
November 16, 1714.—Edward Jaquelin.
April 23, 1718—William Brodnax.[1]
May 9, 1723.—William Brodnax.
May 12, 1726.—William Brodnax.
August 13, 1736.—Lewis Burwell.
November 3, 1748.—Philip Ludwell.
February 27, 1752.—Edward Travis.
March 25, 1758.—Edward Champion Travis.
May, 1765.—Edward Champion Travis.
November 6, 1766.—Edward Ambler.
March 31, 1768.—Edward Champion Travis.
November 7, 1769.—February 10, 1772.—Champion Travis.
February 10, 1772.—Champion Travis.

MEMBERS OF CONVENTIONS.

March 20, 1775, February 17, 1775, December 1, 1775, May 6, 1776.—Champion Travis.

[1] William Brodnax married the widow of Edward Travis. There appear to have been (1) Edward[1] Travis, who married the daughter of John Johnson, living at Jamestown, in 1625; (2) Edward[2] Travis, his son, who married Elizabeth; (3) Edward[3] Travis, who married Rebecca, daughter of John Champion; he died in 1700; (4) Edward[4] Travis, living, in 1716; (5) Edward[5] Travis, member from Jamestown, 1752; (6) Edward Champion[6] Travis; (7) Champion Travis,[7] his son, member of the first State Convention, 1776.

IV.

CHARACTER OF THE EMIGRANTS.

THE people who came to Eastern Virginia were fair representatives of English and Scotch society. The noble families of England were represented in the Wests, Diggeses, Wyatts, Fairfaxes, Humes, etc. Some few knights and knights baronets settled here and left descendants, like Sir George Yeardley, Sir William Skipwith, Sir Thomas Lunsford, and others. Many sons of knights, soldiers, and officers came. The great bulk, however, of the influential people were tradesmen of the English cities, who represented younger branches of the country gentry of England and Scotland.

Regarding the common classes, the great majority of the earliest settlers were self-respecting, honest people, who came at their own expense, or voluntarily entered into a term of service in Virginia. Of the criminal class sent over, many were political prisoners of family and position. As the law of Virginia forbade any convict from ever holding any position of trust in the colony, the influence of such of these as survived the severities of the climate and hard labor in the hot tobacco fields never amounted to anything.[1] About the close of the seventeenth century negro labor was substituted for white labor. Now the emigration of the eighteenth century was vastly greater than that of the seventeenth century, the white population in 1700 being about 70,000, whereas in 1776 it was about 260,000. Comparatively few of these latter emigrants were objectionable. In the nineteenth century a very small percentage of the immense European emigration to the United States came southward; so that the South fortunately missed the flood of paupers and criminals, against whom in the end the Federal Congress found itself compelled to pass stringent laws.

[1] In 1671 Sir William Berkeley said that four out of every five of the servants had perished up to that time during the seasoning period.

The population of the South is thus the most strictly homogeneous American population on the continent.

The people of Eastern Virginia came in part from Southwestern England, where the English slurred their "r's," which accounts for this phenomenon in some parts of Virginia. This element was found in early times, especially in the counties, on the south of the James, and in Henrico county perhaps, which were practically colonies of the great southwestern city of Bristol. Nevertheless, the bulk of the population, and especially the population on the north of the James, as far indeed as the great Potomac, were from *Middle Eastern* England, where the classic English language of Shakespeare prevailed.

It must be remembered that the great company of London merchants first controlled the colony, and the records of the old counties on the north of the James conclusively show that these London merchants were largely represented in that part of Virginia. The trade of the Peninsula counties and of the Gloucester, Rappahannock and Northern Necks was, during the seventeenth century, almost entirely with the great English metropolis. In fact, the deeds and powers of attorney show that the population was largely from London and the environing counties —Middlesex, Essex, etc. Instance the Filmers of Warwick county, Virginia; Timsons, Juxons, Mosses, Goodwins of York county; Pages of Gloucester; Bollings, Blands and Byrds of Charles City, etc., all of whom came from London or near it.

Moreover, there is plenty of evidence that the speech of the people of Virginia had from very early days comparatively little of the provincial or dialectic about it. A single witness suffices—the able professor of mathematics in the College of William and Mary in 1722—Rev. Hugh Jones, A. M. In his *Present State of Virginia* he says that "the planters of Virginia, and even the native negroes, talk good English *without idiom or tone,* and discourse handsomely on most common subjects;" that they, in fact, looked down upon all Englishmen who did not come from London, affecting to be greatly amused at the jargon of persons from Bristol, the smaller cities in England, the rural districts, and from Scotland.

Take not one period, but the whole course of colonial history, and there can be no doubt that many more "bookish people" came

to Virginia than to any other colony. Libraries were more common in Virginia than in any other colony, and the "bookish man," no matter where he came from in England, spoke the language of Middle-Eastern England.

V.

THE FORT.

May 14, 1607.—"We landed all our men; which were set to work about the fortification, and others some to watch and ward as it was convenient."

May 28.—"We laboured pallozadoing our Forte." The Indians were still lurking about; on the 29th they killed one of the English dogs; on Sunday, the 30th, they shot Mr. Eustuce Clovell (who afterwards died of his hurt).

June 5.—While the fort was yet unfinished, the Indians of Paspahegh made a fierce assault. There came above two hundred Indians with their king. They came up almost into the fort, shot through the tents, and killed a boy and wounded eleven men, whereof one died after. "We killed dyvers of them." The Council stood in front, and four out of the five present were wounded [Gosnold, Ratcliffe, Martin and Kendall], and "our President, Mr. Wingfield (who shewed himselfe a valiant gentleman), had an arrow shot cleane through his beарde, yet escaped hurte."

June 6.—Captain Newport caused his men to aid the emigrants in completing their fortifications.

Monday, June 15.—"We had built and finished our fort, which was triangle-wise, having three bulwarkes at every corner, like a half moone, and four or five pieces of artillerie mounted in them."

As described by William Strachey in 1612, the fort faced the river, four hundred and twenty feet, and the other two sides were three hundred feet long. At each angle a bulwark or watch-tower was raised, and in each bulwark a piece or two of ordnance was well mounted. On each side, at an equal distance from the palisades, was a settled street of houses, "running along so as each line of the angle had its street." In the midst were a market place, a storehouse, a corps-du-garde, and the church. The pal-

isades were made of strong plank and strong posts, the latter "being set four feet in the ground."

There was a plain by the west bulwark used for drilling the company, which was called Smithfield [after Sir Thomas Smith]; where sometimes more than a hundred savages would stand in amazement to witness a file of soldiers shoot at a mark on a tree.

A gate opened on the river front, and through this Lord Delaware entered when he made his memorable landing, on Sunday, June 10, 1610.

In 1619, the fort was mounted by two demi-culverins.[1]

On the day of the Indian massacre, Good Friday, March 22, 1622, the guns from the fort dispersed three boat-loads of Indians who appeared before it.

The guard at the fort appears to have consisted of a captain and ten men.

There was at a later day a fort on the island made of turf in shape of a tetragon, having two eastern bastions, and, I suppose, two western ones at the corners. This fort was probably on the same site as the old, and in fact was the old, with its lines conformed to a square.

During the Dutch war, in 1667, Virginia was invaded by a Dutch fleet, which burned the shipping at the mouth of the river. For the protection of the colony, five forts were decreed by the General Assembly to be erected on the five principal rivers. The fort at James City was ordered to be of brick and to be erected at the proper and sole charge of the counties of James City, Surry, Charles City and Henrico.

Mr. William Drummond, Major Theophilus Hone and Mr. Mathew Page were the contractors. The fort was to be of brick, and to have a frontage extending at least one hundred and fifty feet. In 1673 the commissioners of the Association for the counties named complained that the fort was not yet erected, and "only some brick had been made." Thereupon, Drummond and Hone (Page being dead) were ordered to complete the work.

During the next year various fines went to the use of the fort. On April 6, 1674, Mathew Swann and his associates, engaged in a

[1] A culverin was a long cannon, usually an 18-pounder, with serpent-shaped handles.

mutiny that year in Surry, were fined, and the fines given to the fort; but on their due submission these fines were taken off. Mr. Hubert Farrell,[1] of James City county, and Mr. Richard Lawrence, of Jamestown, did not fare so well. The former, on April 7th, was fined, to the use of the fort, ten thousand pounds of tobacco for "scandalizing Mrs. Tabitha Bowler at the house of Mr. White," and the latter, on April 9th, was fined, to the same use, five hundred pounds of tobacco and cask, "for entertaining the Hon'ble the Governor's servants."

After some delay the fort was completed. It had the shape of a half moon, and lay, above the old fort, at the head of Pitch and Tar Swamp in a low ground. At that point the river channel ran close to the shore. It was criticised by the minister, Mr. Clayton, as of not much value for defence, because the rising bank of the river prevented the guns from playing down the stream, "so that if a ship gave a good broadside just when she came to bear on the fort, she might put the fort into that confusion as to have free passage at once enough."

In 1701, the brick fort had twenty guns, "which secured ships riding above Jamestown."

In 1697, an order was made by the Assembly to erect a brick magazine on the island.

In course of time the fort was deserted, and the advancing waters enveloped it. In 1803, Professor Girardin wrote: "Many yards of the palisades erected by the first(?) settlers are still to be seen at low tide, standing at least one hundred and fifty or two hundred paces from the present shore. The pieces of timber which were fixed perpendicularly in the ground have decayed, until they have become entirely submerged by the gradual advancement of the river upon the land, where the fort originally stood." In 1837, Mr. Richard Randolph, under the signature of "The Antiquary," wrote in the *Southern Literary Messenger* that some of the walls and mounds of the fort were then to be seen. "The fort evidently extended some distance beyond its present termination, but has been gradually washed away by the encroaching tides. . . . A few hundred yards to the right of the fort stands a small brick building, which tradition says was a

[1] In a fight at King's Creek, York county, during Bacon's Rebellion, Farrell, who commanded Berkeley's men, was killed.

powder magazine. Underneath this there is a cellar, arched and paved with brick, in which, in all probability, the ammunition was deposited. . . . On the north side of the house numerous impressions in the walls are plainly visible, which, it is evident, were made by balls fired against the house."

The brick magazine before 1861 was used as a house for a carpenter on the place. It has now been nearly all swept away by the waves, and only a corner of the wall is standing.[1]

Nothing now is to be seen of the fort. Its site is entirely covered by water.

[1] Mr. John Gilliam, of Williamsburg, used to occupy it when Mr. Coke owned the plantation in 1846. It then stood about a hundred yards inland, as he informed me.

VI.

THE CHURCH.

THE beginning is thus stated by John Smith: "When I went first to Virginia, I well remember we did hang an awning (which is an old sail) to three or four trees, to shadow us from the sun; our walls were rails of wood, our seats unhewed trees, till we cut planks; our pulpit a bar of wood nailed to two neighboring trees; in fine weather we shifted into an old rotten tent, for we had few better, and this came by way of adventure for new. This was our church till we built a homely thing like a barn, set upon crotchetts, covered with rafts, sedge and earth, so was also the walls. The best of our houses were of the like curiosity, but, for the most part, much worse workmanship, that neither could well defend wind nor rain; yet we had daily common prayer morning and evening, every Sunday two sermons, and every three months the holy communion, till our minister died (the Rev. Mr. Hunt). But our prayers daily, with an homily on Sundays, we continued two or three years after, till more preachers came."

The first church was consumed by fire on January 7, 1608, three days after the landing of the First Supply. Mr. Hunt lost his library, and nearly all the houses in the fort were burned.

Captain Newport and his sailors restored the church, and Smith and Scrivener made further repairs in the spring.

During the spring of the succeeding year (1609) the church was again repaired.

Captain Newport, in the *Mary and Margaret*, sailed from Virginia in December, 1608, with Captain John Ratcliffe, leaving Smith as president, and Scrivener, Waldo and Wynne as members of the Council. Soon after Newport's departure "there was a marriage betwixt John Laydon and Anne Burras (the maid of Mrs. Forrest—the first gentlewoman and woman servant that

arrived in our colony), which was the first marriage ever had in Virginia." This marriage was doubtless performed in the church, and the ceremony was probably conducted by Rev. Robert Hunt. The bridegroom was twenty-seven years old and the bride fourteen.

In the same church was doubtless baptized a year later the first child of this marriage—Virginia Laydon, who was the first fruit of the first English Protestant marriage in the New World, her mother being a maid and her father being a carpenter. The parents and child survived the "Starving Time," and the Virginia Court of 1632 recognized officially the birth by a gift to John Laydon of five hundred acres of land, situated in Elizabeth City county. In 1625, there were living at Elizabeth City John and Anne Laydon and their children, Virginia, Alice, Katherine and Margaret Laydon—all born in Virginia.

Some future genealogist may be able to trace the descendants of these children in Virginia, when perhaps the fortunate representative of this first Virginia marriage should receive some special recognition!

Sir Thomas Gates, who arrived during the horrors of the "Starving Time," found the church in a "ruinous" condition. A few weeks later arrived Lord Delaware, on June 10, 1610. The first thing he did after entering the fort was to visit the church, where he listened to a sermon from the Rev. Richard Buck. Among the objects which received his prompt attention in making repairs was the church. He had it renovated and beautified. The church was of timber, sixty feet long by twenty-four feet wide, and the Lord Governor had it fitted with a chancel of cedar and a communion table of black walnut.

"All the pews and pulpit were of cedar, with fair, broad windows, also of cedar, to shut and open as the weather shall occasion. The font was hewn hollow like a canoe," and there were two bells in the steeple at the west end. "The church was so cast as to be very light within, and the Lord Governor caused it to be kept passing sweet, trimmed up with divers flowers." There was a sexton in charge of the church, and every morning at the ringing of a bell by him, about ten o'clock, each man addressed himself to prayers, and so at four of the clock before supper. There was a sermon every Thursday, and two sermons every Sun-

day, the two preachers (Rev. Mr. Buck and the preacher brought by Lord Delaware) taking their weekly turns.

"Every Sunday, when the Lord Governor went to church, he was accompanied with all the councillors, captains, other officers, and all the gentlemen, and with a guard of fifty halberdiers in his Lordship's livery, fair red cloaks on each side and behind him. The Lord Governor sat in the choir on a green velvet chair, with a velvet cushion before him, on which he knelt, and the council, captains and officers sat on each side of him, each in their place, and when the Lord Governor returned home, he was waited on in the same manner to his house."

About the 5th of April, 1614, the marriage of Pocahontas and John Rolfe was celebrated in the church by the Rev. Richard Buck, according to the beautiful ritual of the Church of England; her father and friends gave approbation to it, her old uncle Apachisco, as the deputy for Powhatan, gave her to him in the church, two of her brothers were present to see the ceremony performed, and a general peace ensued upon it, which lasted as long as Pocahontas lived. The distinction of this couple warrants some further statement. John Rolfe, the bridegroom, came of an ancient family of Heacham, County Norfolk, England. He was the son of John Rolfe and Dorothea Mason. He was baptized in the church at Heacham May 6, 1585. He came to Bermuda, in the Third Supply, with Sir Thomas Gates, and while there a daughter was born to him of a wife married in England. She was christened Bermuda by the Rev. Richard Buck, but soon died. The parents reached Virginia in May, 1610, where the mother died. In 1612, John Rolfe was the first Englishman to introduce the cultivation of tobacco in Virginia. He succeeded Ralph Hamor as Secretary of State in 1614. He was in England with his Indian bride in 1616-1617, and while there he sent a description of Virginia to King James and to Sir Robert Rich. He was a member of the Council of Virginia in 1619. He married thirdly, Jane, daughter of Captain William Pierce. He met his death, it is believed, in the massacre of 1622, at the hands of the Indians, whose spiritual welfare he had hoped by his marriage with Pocahontas to materially elevate.

Pocahontas, the bride, was the daughter of Powhatan, head-war-chief of all the Indians in Tide-water Virginia. Her name,

Pocahontas, was a pet name for "Little Wanton." Her true name was Matoaka. She was of a gentle and loving disposition, and, by her influence with her father, saved the lives of two men prominent in the history of the colony—Captain John Smith and Captain Henry Spelman (son of Sir Henry Spelman, the historian), who lived with the Indians, was well versed in the Indian tongue, and acted as interpreter for the colony. She was captured by Sir Samuel Argall in April, 1613, and married John Rolfe about the 5th of April, 1614. She is supposed to have lived at Varina with her husband till her visit to England in 1616. There she attracted much attention. Lord and Lady Delaware introduced her at court. She died at Gravesend on March 21, 1617, leaving behind her one only son, Thomas Rolfe, who was educated by his uncle, Henry Rolfe. He afterwards came to Virginia, where he married a Miss Poythress. The most distinguished of her descendants was John Randolph of Roanoke.

When Captain Argall arrived in 1617 as deputy-governor under Lord Delaware, the colonists were so absorbed in the culture of tobacco that Jamestown was much neglected. The church was down, and the storehouse was used for the church. Captain Argall corrected these defects and repaired the church and cottages in the city.

On the arrival of Sir George Yeardley in 1619, he called a General Assembly of the plantations to meet at Jamestown on Friday, July 30, of that year. This was an epoch in the history of not only Virginia, but the United States. This first American popular legislative body sat in the quire of the church. This building was, I suppose, the same church of timber which Lord Delaware used to attend, and in which Pocahontas was married, although it is variously described as sixty by twenty-four in 1610, and fifty by twenty in 1619.

"Where Sir George Yeardly, the Governor, being sett downe *in his accustomed place*, those of the counsel of Estate sat next him on both handes, except only the Secretary [John Pory], then appointed Speaker, who sat right before him; John Twine, clerk of the General Assembly, being placed next the Speaker; and Thomas Pierse, the Sergeant, standing at the barre, to be ready for any service the Assembly should command him.

"But forasmuch as men's affaires doe little prosper where God's

service is neglected, all the Burgesses took their places in the Quire till a prayer was said by Mr. [Richard] Bucke, the minister, that it would please God to guard and sanctifie all our proceedings to his own glory and to the good of this Plantation.

"Prayer being ended, to the intent that as we had begun at God Almighty, so we might proceed with awful and due respecte towards the Lieutenant, our most gratious and dread soveraigne [James I.], all the Burgesses were entreated to retyre themselves into the body of the church, which being done, before they were fully admitted, they were called in order and by name, and so every man (none staggering at it) took the oath of Supremacy and then entered the Assembly."

The General Assembly in 1619 consisted of the Governor, six councillors (probably more) and twenty burgesses, representing ten plantations. They sat together as one body, a custom which was kept up till the time of Lord Culpeper, who brought about the separation of the Council from the Burgesses. In token of authority, as the masters of Masonic lodges do to-day, they kept their hats on. The inauguration of legislative power in Virginia preceded the existence of negro slavery, and has survived it. The earliest Assembly in the oldest of the original States, at its first session, took measures towards the erection of a "University and College." Care was also taken for the education of Indian children. The speaker of the Assembly was John Pory, a Master of Arts of the University of Cambridge, whose experience as a member of Parliament recommended him to the place. As Secretary of State he was a member of the Council, and as such he was, of course, a member of the Assembly. It is probable that the General Assembly held their subsequent meetings in the church till the State House was built, some time after 1639.

In January, 1639, Sir John Harvey reported that the Council and himself, as well as the ship captains and ablest planters, had "largely contributed for the building of a brick church" at Jamestown. Building did not proceed very fast in those days, and the church was not completed till several years later. When Southwark Parish, in Surry (then part of James City county), was, in November, 1647, made into a separate parish, it was provided by the General Assembly that the inhabitants of Southwark "pay and satisfie to the minister of James City all custo-

mary tithes and dues, and all rates and taxes assessed, and to be assessed, for and toward the finishing of the church in James City."

On November 4, 1639, the Rev. Thomas Hampton received a grant for land on a ridge behind the church, running east and west eighty-two poles, and north and south thirty-six paces ("five feet to a pace").

On June 12, 1644, he received another grant for land on a ridge behind the church, one hundred and twelve paces east and west, and running the same breadth northerly to Back River. A grant to John White August 28, 1644 placed "the land appertaining to the State House" east of the church-yard, and gave the distance of Mr. Hampton's land as twenty-three poles, or one hundred and twenty-six and one-half yards, from the river front. Another grant—one to Radulph Spraggins, August 18, 1644—for one acre of land on the river at the western side, bounding east towards the land of Mr. Hampton, shows that the old wooden church and the fort in which it stood were higher up on the shore than the present brick church. A grant to Henry Hartwell, Esq., in 1689, mentions as visible on the east of Mr. Sherwood's lot, in James City, very near the river, "two of the eastern bastions of an old ruined turf fort."

On March 9, 1641, the General Court ordered that a general vestry be elected at "James Citty." In February, 1645, it was enacted by the General Assembly, with the consent of Mr. Thomas Hampton, "minister of James Citty parrish," that the inhabitants of the east side of Archer's Hope Creek to the head thereof and down to Wareham Ponds (about five miles down the river) should constitute a distinct parish of themselves.

We hear no more of the brick church till Bacon's Rebellion in 1676. Then we learn that it was fired by a torch in the hand of Bacon.

The church was repaired, presumably on the same walls, shortly after; for in the proceedings of the vestry of Bruton Parish, among other items concerning the building of the brick church at Middle Plantation (Williamsburg), it was ordered in 1678 that "y^e^ west door and chancell door be according to the dimensions of James City church door, only to be one foot higher and ½ a foot wider than they are."

The last great connection of the church at Jamestown with the public history of the State is when the clergy assembled, in 1690, at Jamestown, under the lead of James Blair, commissary, and digested the scheme for a college at Williamsburg.

The church continued, however, in active use for many years after this. In the time of Governor Dinwiddie, 1751-1758, a new brick church, called the Upper Church, was erected on the Main farm, about three miles from Jamestown, near the road from Williamsburg to Chickahominy Ferry.

Preaching was doubtless discontinued at Jamestown after this time. The church must have soon fallen into decay, and its bricks were probably used to construct other buildings on the island. The tower or steeple soon alone remained. The first pictorial representation of this tower appeared in 1805 in a magazine edited at Richmond by Louis H. Girardin, formerly professor of Modern Languages, History and Geography in William and Mary College, and later a teacher in a female seminary in Richmond. This magazine, alike pretentious in title and form, died with its first number. It was in quarto, with six fine plates colored, among them the Jamestown tower. The engravings were by Frederick Bosler, and the title of the publication was *Amoenitates Graphicae*, with other descriptive words. Mr. R. A. Brock, of Richmond, has a copy of this rare work.

On October 27, 1856, Jamestown was visited by Bishop William Meade, Rev. Dr. Silas Totten, of William and Mary; Mr. Richard Randolph (called the Antiquarian), and Colonel Goodrich Durfey, a former proprietor of the place. The foundations of the church were then marked by bricks, which, in part, still remain. On accurate measurement the foundation was ascertained to be fifty-six by twenty-eight feet. The ruined tower was judged to be about thirty feet high, and by measurement proved to be eighteen feet square.

A few remarks may be added regarding the ruins of the old church-yard. It is said to have contained half an acre of land. According to a grant of land in 1690, the highway passed by the northeast corner, and the church-yard was then surrounded by "rails," which ran "north 87 degrees westerly," or nearly west. A brick wall appears to have been raised at a later date, which, in the time of John Ambler and William Lee, was *in part* pulled down, and the bricks used to construct

the small enclosure now standing around the remaining tombstones. The enclosure is said by Bishop Meade to cover about one-third of the original area, and takes in a part of the spot on which the church stood.

Among the objects which attracted attention in 1807, during the Jubilee of that year, was a young sycamore tree, whose trunk had become fastened between the massive tombstones of Dr. James Blair and his wife, Sarah Blair, and tended incessantly to propel them from their centres. The sycamore, now grown into a large tree, shattered both tombstones, and carried some ten feet from the ground a fragment of the monument of Mrs. Blair, imbedded partially in its trunk. When in 1895 the tombstones in the churchyard were temporarily removed for the purpose of cleaning the yard, this piece of marble was unfortunately released from the embrace of the tree, which has since proceeded to close the cavity.

Here, then, is authentic evidence of one tree, at least, in Virginia which is upwards of one hundred years old.

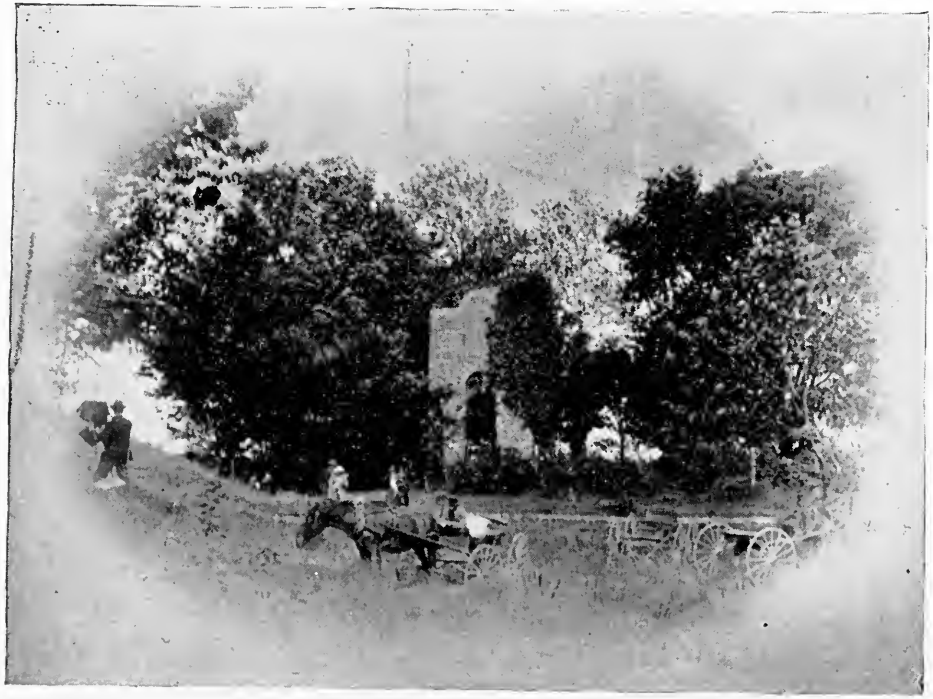
The church-yard once contained a great many tombstones, but the relic hunters, and others not so sentimentally inclined, have carried off the greater part; and most of those which remain are in fragments. But not alone is the graveyard the burial-place of the first settlers. The whole island is a graveyard. Skeletons have been found at many places, and especially along the shores. We have seen that the first churches were in the fort, which was higher up the island. So the first graveyard was probably in that quarter. At the east end of the island, in a clump of trees, is the private burial-place of the Travis family, in which some tombstones may still be seen.

During the war of 1861-'65, the soil near the brick tower was thrown into fortifications, and pieces of armor, sword hilts, calthorps, gold, silver and copper coin were found.

FURNITURE AND SERVICE AT JAMESTOWN CHURCH.

Some of the sacred vessels of Jamestown are still preserved.

There are two massive silver pieces: a silver chalice and paten, with an inscription on each; then a silver plate, being part of a communion service; then a silver alms-basin or plate; and,



THE TOWER AT JAMESTOWN.

lastly, a silver vase, or font, for baptism. As to the first two of these—the silver chalice and paten—they are now in possession of Bruton Church, in Williamsburg. Each of the two vessels bears the inscription, "*Mixe not holy things with profane*," and about the rim at the bottom is "*Ex dono Francisci Moryson, Armigeri. Anno Domi* 1661." Francis Morrison, or Moryson, was at the time acting governor of the colony. The maker of this service, whose mark was "T. W." was also the maker of a celebrated cup owned by the Blacksmith's Company, London, 1655, and subsequently purchased at a sale for three hundred and seventy-eight pounds.

As to the third piece, the silver alms-basin, it is now at the Union Theological Seminary, in Alexandria. It has a Latin inscription which shows that it was given in 1694 "for the use of Jamestown Church" by Sir Edmund Andros, Knight, Governor of the colony.

Finally, the fourth article, which is now in the possession of the Monumental Church in Richmond, the vase for baptism, was presented to the Jamestown Church in 1733 by Martha Jaquelin, widow of Edward Jaquelin, and their son Edward.

It may not be out of place to add, in this connection, that the stone font of the "Church on the Main" is preserved, with other relics, in the old powder magazine in Williamsburg.

TOMBSTONES.

In the Yard of the Church.

[Fragment of Lady Frances Berkeley's tombstone, now at *Meadowville*, on James River. It will be remembered that she always called herself Lady Berkeley, even after she married again.]

yeth the Bod
LADY FRANC
KLEY

[Fragment of the tombstone of Philip Ludwell, Esq., the inscription being partially supplied from the *Richmond Dispatch* for May 15, 1857.]

Here lies interred the body of PHILIP LUDWELL who died the 11th of January 1720 in the 54th year of his age "sometime auditor of his Majesty's revenue and twenty-five years member of the Council."

[The fragments of Commissary Blair's tombstone are scattered through the church yard. They were deciphered as follows by the late Hugh Blair Grigsby.]

H. S. E. (Hic sepultus est)
Vir Reverendus et Honorabilis
JACOBUS BLAIR, A. M.
Qui
In Scotia natus
In Academia Edinburgensi nutritus,
Primo Angliam deinde Virginiam
Venit:
Qua Parte Tenarum
Annos LVIII. Evangelii Preconis
LIV. Commissarii
Gulielmi et Mariae praesidis,
e Britanniae Principum
Consilarii
Concillii Praesidis
Coloniae Prefecti
munera sustinuit:
ornavit
um oris venusti Decus,
ate hilari sine (?) hospitali
munificent
issimo egenis largo,
omnibus corni
superavit,
Collegio bene devioram
Fundaverat
eus Bibliothe cani suam
id aleudum Theologiae studiosum
juventutum pauperiorum instituendam
Testamento legavit
Cal. Maii in die
MDCCXLIII
aetat: LXXXVIII.
am desideratissimi
Seuis Laudem
is nepotibus commendabunt
pene marmore perenniora.

[Fragment of the tombstone of Sarah Blair, the wife of the Commissary.]

AH
Commissa
of this Parish
M HANNAH H
1670 Married June ye 2d

[A portion of Mrs. Blair's epitaph may be supplied from a clipping taken from the *Constellation*, September 17, 1835, giving an account of a visit to Jamestown, copied from the Norfolk *Beacon*.]

Memoriae Sacram
Here lyes in the hope of a Blessed Resurrection
ye Body of MRS. SARAH BLAIR, wife of
Mr. James Blair Commissary of Virginia
Sometime Minister of this Parish.
She was daughter of
Col. Benjamin and Mrs Hannah Harrison of
Surry. Born Aug. ye 14th 1670. Married
June ye 2d 1687.
died May ye 5, 1713 exceeding beloved and
lamented.

[Then follows a long Latin inscription partly concealed by the tree which clasps it.]

Here Lyeth [the]
Body of [the Rev.]
JOHN CLOUGH [late Minister]
of this Place Who [departed]
This Life [January 15th 168¾]
And Waiteth [in hopes]
A joyful Res[urrection]

[H]ere Lyeth WILLIAM SHERWOO[D]
That was Born in the parish
of White Chappell near
London. A Great sinner
Waiting for a joyfull
Resurrection

Under this Stone lies interred
The Body of
MRS. HANNAH LUDWELL
Relict of
The Hon. Philip Ludwell Esq
By Whom She has left
One Son and Two Daughters
After a most Exemplary Life
Spent in chearful Innocence
And The continual Exercise of
Piety Charity and Hospitality
She Patiently Submitted
Death on the 4th Day of April 1731 in the 52d
Year of Her Age.

Here lyeth the Body of
MARY the Wife of John
Knight who departed
this life Febr 11th 1732-3 in
the 59th Year of her Age
Waiting for a joyful resurrection

[Tombstone of Ursula Beverley, now missing,]

Here lyeth inter'd the body of URSULA BEVERLEY, late wife of Robert Beverley, and daughter of ye very Honorable Wm Byrd, who departed this Life the 11th day of October 1698, being much lamented by all that knew her, aged 16 years 11 months and 2 dayes.

[Tombstone of Mrs. Edwards, now missing.]

* * interred the body of ————, wife of William Edwards ———— City, Gent, and daughter of ———— Harrison of ye ———— sixth day of January ———— 14th day ———— seventeenth year ———— dayes.

[Remains of a stone.]

———— waiting second edition of the first.

[Tombstone of John Ambler, Esq., now missing.]

JOHN AMBLER ESQUIRE, Barrister at Law
Representative in the Assembly for
Jamestown and Collector of the District
of York River in this Province.

He was born the 31st of December 1735, and died at Barbadoes 27th of May 1766.

In the relative and social duties—as a son, and a brother and a friend—few equalled him, and none excelled him. He was early distinguished by his love of letters, which he improved at Cambridge and the Temple, and well knew how to adorn a manly sense with all the elegance of language. To an extensive knowledge of men and things he joined the noblest sentiments of liberty, and in his own example held up to the world the most striking picture of the amiableness of religion.

Tombstone of Hon. William Lee (now missing) of "Greenspring who died June 27, 1795 Aged fifty-eight Years."

Tombstones in the Burial Ground of the Travis Family.

Here lyeth the Body of EDWARD TRAVIS
who departed this life the 12th day of
November in the year of our Lord 1700

[*Skull and cross bones.*]
Here lyeth in the hope of A glorious Resurrection
the body of JOHN CHAMPION who was borne
the 10th day of November in the yeare of our
Lord 1660 and departed this life the 16th
day of December in the year of our Lord
1700.
And likewise JOHN CHAMPION the son of John
Champion who was borne the 11th day of Decr
in the yeare of our Lord 1695 and departed
this life the 11th day of September in the yeare
of our Lord 1700.

SUSANNA TRAVIS wife of
Edward Champion Travis and
Daughter of John Hutchings
of the Borough of Norfolk Mercht
and Amy his Wife who Departed
this life October the 28th: 1761 in the
33rd Year of her Age much Lamented
by all her Acquaintance
And leaving Issue three Sons and
one Daughter.

Nigh this Place are also Interred
The Following Children of the said
Edward Travis and Susannah his wife
ELIZABETH who was born August
24th 1748 and Died September 22d 1749
AMY who was born October 9th 1752
and Died October 2nd 1755
JOHN who was born December 9th 1755
and Died November 25th 1759.

Tombstone at Greenspring.

Here lyeth ye body of ELIZ. DRUMMOND
who departed this Life ye 2d day of
June Anno Dmi 1699 Aetatis (suae) 28.

Ministers.

Rev. Robert Hunt was the first minister of Jamestown Church. He was recommended to President Edward-Maria Wingfield by his Grace, Richard Bancroft, Archbishop of Canterbury. He was probably the Rev. Robert Hunt, A. M., who was appointed to the vicarage of Reculver, Kent, January 18, 1594, and resigned in 1602. His salary was about fifty pounds a year. He lost his library by fire at Jamestown, January 7, 1608. All parties unite in praise of him. He died in Virginia, but it is not known in what year. He is thought to have performed the marriage ceremony for John Laydon, a carpenter, and Anne Burras, the maid of Mrs. Forrest—which was the first English marriage in America. He certainly died before October, 1609.

Rev. Richard Buck came to Virginia with Sir Thomas Gates. He is said to have been a graduate of Oxford University. While in the Bermudas he baptized John Rolfe's infant daughter, Bermuda, by his first wife. The child soon died. He reached Jamestown with Gates, May 21, 1610, where on landing he held services in the church, and made "a zealous and sorrowful prayer" over the spectacle of death and starvation which the fort presented. On the arrival of Lord Delaware he divided with the minister whom the latter brought over the duties of the church at Jamestown, "the two preachers taking their turns weekly." He united in marriage John Rolfe and Pocahontas about the 15th of April, 1614. He is mentioned as "a verie good preacher." He acted as the chaplain of the first General Assembly that ever met in Virginia. His opening prayer was that it would please God "to guard and sanctifie all our proceedings to his own glory and the good of this plantation."

He purchased on December 18, 1620, from William Fairfax, "yeoman and ancient planter, who had remained 8 years in the country, and Margery his wife, an old planter also that came into the country, married to said Fairfax," twelve acres of land, a mile from Jamestown, in the eastern part of the island, on which were "a dwelling house and another little house."

He patented also seven hundred and fifty acres, and had a glebe of one hundred acres. The Glebe land is still known as such,

and is situated across from the east end of the island adjoining Archer's Hope.[1]

His widow, Bridget, married, secondly, John Burrows, and thirdly, John Bromfield. He had five children (1) Marah, who appears to have been the second wife of Richard Adkins; (2) Gershon, who in 1636 left "500 acres upon a creek, between the Glebe land and adjoining the land of the orphants and heires of Mr. Richard Buck," to his brother—(3) Peleg; (4) Benoni, "the first idiot born in Virginia," and (5) Elizabeth, who married Lieutenant Thomas Crump, of Neck of Land, who in 1636 sold land to Gershon Buck, of Jamestown Island.

Rev. Hawte Wyatt came to Virginia with his excellent brother, Governor Sir Francis Wyatt, in October, 1621, and was minister of Jamestown till after 1625, when he probably returned to England with his brother on the death of their father, George Wyatt, Esq. He was of the illustrious family of the Wyatts of Boxley, in Kent county, England, and was grandson of Sir Thomas Wyatt, the younger, who was beheaded for attempting to raise a rebellion against Bloody Queen Mary. Another of his ancestors, Sir Henry Wyatt, received from Henry VII. the highest honors of the kingdom—was privy councillor, etc. His picture was always taken with a cat beside him, because when confined by Richard III. in a cold and narrow tower, where he had neither food to eat nor fire to keep him warm, a cat brought him regularly every day a pigeon for his dinner, and kept the warmth in his body by permitting Sir Henry to fondle and caress her.

Rev. Hawte Wyatt, after leaving Virginia, was inducted rector of Boxley, in Kent, October 3, 1632, and died there July 31, 1638. He was twice married, and two of his sons, Edward and George, settled at Middle Plantation, in Virginia. The Wyatt monumental tablet in the church at Boxley states that "Hawte Wyatt left issue living in Virginia."

[1] There is a grant 20 July, 1646, confirming to Lucy, Judith and Jane Webster, daughters and heirs of Roger Webster, *Archer's Hope*, bounded north upon Archer's Hope Creek, south upon the Main River, west upon the Glebe land, and east upon Fowler's Neck; which said tract was granted in 1619 to William Spence and John Fowler, and assigned by Thomas and Sarah Brice to Roger Webster.

Rev. Francis Bolton also came with Governor Wyatt in 1621. He was minister first at Elizabeth City, but in 1623 he was minister of the plantation on the Eastern Shore of the Chesapeake Bay. After Wyatt he appears to have been the minister at Jamestown, and was witness there to the will of Thomas Warnett, a leading merchant of Jamestown, in February, 1629-'30.

Rev. Thomas Hampton was the next minister, as far as the writer knows. He was probably the Thomas Hampton entered among the Oxford matriculates, as son of William of Reigate Surry, *sacerd.* He matriculated at New College 11th of March, 1624-'25, aged sixteen; B. A. from Corpus Christi College 30th of January, 1626-'27. His father was Vicar of Reigate in 1599, and he, Rev. Thomas, was brother of Rev. William Hampton, who, at the age of seventy-seven, died in 1677, while rector of Bletchingly, in Surry. Rev. Thomas Hampton came to Virginia before 1636, in which year he secured several grants for land in the Upper county of New Norfolk (afterwards Nansemond county). In 1640, he received from the General Court an order for one hundred acres in addition to the one hundred acres of glebe belonging to the rectory of James City Parish. On November 4, 1639, he received a grant, pursuant to an act for building James City, dated February 20, 1636-'37, of a ridge of land between two swamps behind the church, running in length east and westerly eighty-two poles, and in breadth northerly and southerly thirty-six paces (five feet to every pace). Another patent, June 12, 1644, gave him eight acres on a ridge behind the church, extending from the easternmost bounds westerly one hundred and twelve paces (five feet to a pace), and running the same breadth northerly to Back River.

An order of York Court does not show Mr. Hampton in a very enviable light:

Whereas it appears to the court that "Mr. Thomas Hampton clerk obteyned the guardianship of the orphants of John Powell late of yis county dec and hath possesst himselfe with yere estates & hath also removed one of ye sd orphants with most of ye sd estate out of yis county and left behind ye other orphan by name Wm Powell without necessary p'von, to say even starke naked whereupon ye court upon ye pet of ye sd Wm Powell doth order yat Thomas Harwood shall have into his keeping Wm Powell orphan," &c. York Court, Nov. 26, 1646.

This order, however, must be taken with some grains of allowance, as the people of that day, even the justices, were good haters, and never spared any person they disliked. There was no such thing as moderation in expression.

Mr. Hampton's tombstone was formerly to be seen at King's Creek, York county, according to which he died January 5, 1647.

Rev. Thomas Harrison came to Virginia in 1642 as chaplain of Sir William Berkeley. When, on invitation of the Puritans of Nansemond county, the ministers, John Knowles, William Thompson and Thomas James, came from New England to Virginia, Harrison used his influence to have them silenced and banished from the colony. Soon after occurred the Indian massacre of April 17, 1644. The Puritans heralded this as a judgment of God upon the country for its rejection of the godly ministers. Harrison became a changed man. He turned Puritan himself. Berkeley dismissed him from Jamestown, and he crossed to Nansemond, where he was minister for a short time. After this the Nansemond and the Lower Norfolk county Puritans, upon the invitation of Lord Baltimore, emigrated to Maryland; and Harrison, in the fall of 1648, visited Boston, where he married Dorothy Symonds, a cousin of Governor Winthrop. He then returned to England, and in 1649 obtained an order from the Council of State, directed to Governor Berkeley, to permit Harrison's return to Virginia. Harrison, however, did not return to America, but became chief chaplain of Henry Cromwell, Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, and in Christ Church Cathedral, Dublin, he preached a sermon on the death of his father, Oliver Cromwell.

Rev. Philip Mallory appears in the Virginia records as early as 1656. He was probably in Virginia much earlier than that. He was a son of Dr. Thomas Mallory, Dean of Chester. He matriculated at Corpus Christi College, 28th of May, 1634, aged seventeen; B. A. from St. Mary's Hall, 26th of April, 1637; M. A., 16th of January, 1639-'40; vicar of Norton, Durham, in 1641. His brother, Rev. Thomas Mallory, was ejected by the Parliamentary party from his living during the civil war, but was reinstated canon of Chester in 1662 by King Charles II. Rev. Philip Mallory married Catherine, daughter of Robert Batte, vice-

master of Oxford University. He removed with his wife's relatives, the Battes,[1] and settled in Virginia.

He was a man of high character and exemplary piety, and stood at the head of the church in Virginia. In 1656, he was authorized by the General Assembly, in connection with Mr. John Green, to examine into the competency of all ministers in the colony. He officiated at the two Assemblies, March 1657-'58 and 1658-'59, and had charge of the religious services when Charles II. was, with great rejoicing, proclaimed at Jamestown, September 20, 1660. In March, 1661, the Legislature testified that "Mr. Philip Mallory had been eminently faithful in the ministry, and very diligent in endeavoring the advancement of those means that might conduce to the advancement of religion in this country," and appointed him "to undertake the soliciting of our church affairs in England." In 1664 he was minister of the church in Elizabeth City county.[2] In 1668, Roger Mallory, who appears to have been his son, obtained a certificate for a grant of land from York Court "for the use of Mr. Philip Mallory." Roger Mallory settled in King and Queen county, and had a son William who was ancestor of the distinguished family of his name

[1] These Battes, who have been numerously represented in Virginia, were of Okewell, County York, England. (See *Genealogist* for October, 1898, pages 86-88.) John Batte, brother of Mrs. Mallory, married her husband's sister, Martha Mallory, and was a royalist. He was fined £364, and is said to have been a captain at the battle of Adwalton. The pedigree says that two of his sons, Thomas and Henry, came to Virginia. (See *Genealogist.*) In April, 1668, "Thomas Batte and Henry Batte, sonnes of Mr. John Batte deced," obtained a patent for 5,878 acres, 2 roods and 8 rods on Appomattox River for 118 "head-rights," or emigrants; and among the names represented were John Batte, sen., John Batte, jun., William Batte, Thomas Batte, Henry Batte, Philip Mallory, Nathaniel Mallory, sen., Nathaniel Mallory, jun., William Mallory, Thomas Mallory, Elizabeth Mallory, and Roger Mallory. So it seems from this that John Batte, the cavalier, and all his sons, John, William, Thomas and Henry, came to Virginia, as well as a whole host of Mallorys. Mrs. Mallory had also two uncles in Virginia, William and Henry Batte.

[2] Bishop Meade evidently confuses dates on pages 230 and 231 of Vol. I. in his *Old Churches*, &c. Rev. Justinian Aylmer did not officiate from 1645 to 1667, as he states on page 230, but from 1665 to 1667, as he states on page 231—having succeeded Rev. Philip Mallory as minister of Elizabeth City parish.

in Elizabeth City county, where his grandfather lived and had land.

Rev. Morgan Godwin entered Oxford in 1661, and received, on March 16, 1664-'65, the degree of A. B., and soon after came to Virginia. His father, Rev. Morgan Godwin, was Archdeacon of Shropshire, his grandfather, Bishop of Hereford, and his great-grandfather, Thomas Godwin, Bishop of Bath and Wells. He resided for a short time at Jamestown, and after visiting the West Indies, returned to England, where, in 1680, he published a dissertation against slavery, called *The Negroes' and Indians' Advocate*. Five years later he preached a sermon at Westminster Abbey against the evils of the slave-trade, thus preceding Wilberforce and Clarkson more than a century in their efforts along the same line.

Rev. Justinian Aylmer was born in 1635, and was probably the Justinian Aylmer who matriculated at Trinity College, Oxford, 23d of July, 1656, and became B. A. 24th of October, 1657, and erroneously stated, as I believe, by Foster to have been rector of Ipswich in 1699.[1] The pedigrees of Aylmer and Hone, and the connection of those families in Virginia, render it reasonably certain that he was a grandson of Theophilus Aylmer, Archdeacon of the Diocese of London.[2] In 1661, he appears to have been minister of Hampton Parish, York county, and there are some depositions about the Quakers of York county and Mr. Aylmer. From 1665 to 1667 he was minister of Elizabeth City Parish. He died at Jamestown as minister of that parish in 1671, and there is this entry in the records of the General Court:

Nov. 23, 1671.

Whereas at last court Capt Christopher Wormeley as marrying the relict of Mr Aylmer deced late minister of James Citty obteyned Judgmt agt Major Hone and Mr May as members of the vestry for sixteene pounds thirteen shillings foure pence due to the said Aylmer as officiating in his said ffunction. And whereas the said Hone and May sued Mr. Walter Chiles and Capt. ffra Kirkeman the prsent churchwardens, It is now ordered that the Majr Hone & Mr May be repaid the said sum of sixteene pounds thirteen shillings foure pence by the said parish according to agreemt made wth the said Mr Aylmer, according to an order of the said vestry with costs als exec.

[1] Foster's *Oxford Matriculates.*

[2] *Visitation of Essex*, p. 422; *Visitation of London*, p. 35; *Virginia Magazine of History and Biography*, IV., p. 4, V., p. 429; *William and Mary Quarterly*, VI., p. 32.

The wife of Justinian Aylmer was Frances Armistead, who married (1) Lieutenant-Colonel Anthony Elliott, (2) Rev. Justinian Aylmer, (3) Colonel Christopher Wormeley. Major Beverley married Catherine, the widow of Major Theophilus Hone, and calls John Armistead "brother," which shows that Catherine Hone was probably a sister of the above-named Frances and John Armistead.

Rev. John Clough was minister of Jamestown during Bacon's Rebellion. He was an active supporter of Sir William Berkeley, and was outlawed by Bacon. He was captured by Bacon, and condemned to death, but pardoned. He was minister of Southwark Parish in Surry in 1680, but returned after a short time to Jamestown Parish. His tombstone is still in the church-yard at Jamestown, and bears the following inscription:

Here Lyeth [the]
Body of [the Rev]
JOHN CLOUGH[1] [late Minister]
Of this Place who [departed]
This Life January 15th 168¾
And waiteth [in hopes of]
A Joyfull Res[urrection]

Rowland Jones, in 1680, appears as minister for Jamestown, as well as for Bruton and Martin's Hundred Parishes. He was the son of Rev. Rowland Jones, vicar of Wendover, in Buckinghamshire. He was born in 1640 at Swinbrook, in County Oxford, England, and was an alumnus of Merton College, Oxford University. He was minister of the church at Middle Plantation (Williamsburg), and died there April 23, 1688, after fourteen years of service in Bruton Parish. His tombstone in Bruton Church-yard, Williamsburg, describes him as "*pastor primus et dilectissimus.*" He has numerous representatives in Virginia. He was ancestor of Martha Dandridge, wife of General George Washington.

Rev. John Clayton. There are several John Claytons among the Oxford matriculates who might be taken for this man. He came to Virginia in 1684, and remained two years. In May, 1688, he was rector of Crofton at Wakefield, in Yorkshire. He

[1] This name has been often deciphered from the worn tombstone as *Gough*, but *Clough* is right.

was a member of the Royal Society, and was a great admirer of Hon. Robert Boyle, the philosopher and naturalist, to whom he wrote, on his arrival at Jamestown, June 23, 1684, describing a remarkable instance of animal electricity and the fly called the "fire-fly" (Boyle's *Works,* V., p. 646). He wrote after his return to England several letters about Virginia, which were published in the Transactions of the Royal Society (Force's *Tracts,* Vol. III.). He was very fond of scientific studies, but his reflections on Virginia, though very excellent, might have been made more valuable but for his loss on the way thither of all his scientific apparatus—"books, chymicall instruments, glasses, and microscopes." As it is, we are under great obligations to him for his description of Jamestown Island, and of the soil, animals, and inhabitants of Virginia. In 1705, arrived in Virginia John Clayton, son of Sir John Clayton. He became Attorney-General, Judge of the Admiralty, and died, aged seventy-two, in 1737. He was father of John Clayton, a celebrated botanist, who wrote *Flora Virginica,* and had a botanical garden at Windsor, his home, in Gloucester county, Va. He left numerous descendants in Virginia, and was probably a relative of Rev. John Clayton, the minister of Jamestown.

Rev. James Blair, D. D., became minister of Jamestown in 1694. He was a master of arts of the University of Edinburgh in 1673, and came to Virginia in 1685. He was minister of the churches in Henrico, and lived at Varina, on James River, till his removal in 1694 to Jamestown. His eminent abilities secured for him the office of commissary to the Bishop of London in 1689. Inspired by his residence near the site of the old settlements at Henrico, where the people had once proposed to build a college, he set about to revive this great undertaking. He appealed to the clergy and the public authorities, and in 1692 he was sent by the General Assembly to England as their agent to solicit a charter and money for the enterprise. Having proved successful, and having been elected president of the College, he determined to accept a call to Jamestown, so as to be nearer to the College. He was also made a member of the Council, and thus his influence was felt in college, church and state. On Sunday, April 25, 1703, Rev. George Keith entered the following in his journal: "I preached at Jamestown on John i. 3, at the request of Reverend

WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE,

[*As it appeared during the Presidency of Dr. James Blair.*]

Mr. Blair, minister there, and commissary, who very kindly and hospitably entertained us at his house."

In the year 1710, Dr. Blair accepted the rectorship of Bruton Church, in Williamsburg, in order to be still nearer the College, of which he was president. He married Sarah Harrison, daughter of Colonel Benjamin Harrison, of Surry. He died April 18, 1743. He was buried at Jamestown, where fragments of the tombstones of himself and wife still remain.

As President of the Council, Dr. Blair acted as chief executive, in the absence of Sir William Gooch on the Carthagena expedition, from June, 1740, to July, 1741. He was always found battling for morality and the right, though somewhat dictatorial and not always charitable in his opinion of others. He left no children; but his brother, Dr. Archibald Blair, is numerously represented in Virginia and in the South.

John Warden, a Scotch clergyman, served six months as minister at Jamestown, after his arrival in Virginia in 1712.

Rev. Peter Fontaine was minister at Jamestown for six months after his arrival in Virginia in 1716. He was son of Rev. James Fontaine, a French Huguenot, descendant of the noble family of the Fontaines of Maine, in France. Rev. Peter left Jamestown for Westover Parish, in Charles City county, where he was the

friend of the eminent Colonel William Byrd, of Westover. In 1728-'29 he was the chaplain to the Virginia Commission which ran the boundary line between Virginia and North Carolina, the history of which was so graphically and entertainingly written by Colonel Byrd. He died in July, 1757, and he has many descendants in the male and female lines.

Rev. Hugh Jones, the distinguished professor of Mathematics in the College of William and Mary, preached at Jamestown in 1719. He was an Englishman of university training, who came first to Maryland in 1696, and became the incumbent of Christ Church Parish, in Calvert county. He sent home an account of the Province of Maryland, which was published in the Transactions of the Royal Society. Upon the recommendation of the Bishop of London he was appointed to the chair of Mathematics in the College of William and Mary. While resident there he served as chaplain of the General Assembly, and as lecturer in Bruton Church. He also preached at Jamestown. He left the province for England in 1722, and in 1724 he brought out in London his exceedingly valuable book on *The Present State of Virginia*, written in a very sprightly and suggestive style. Returning to America after a long absence in England, the Rev. Hugh Jones resumed parochial work in Virginia, but he finally returned to Maryland, where he built up various parishes, notably William and Mary Parish and Sassafras Parish in Cecil county. He persuaded the people to build brick churches instead of cheap wooden structures. Thus invigorating society wherever he went, he continued pastoral work until he was nearly ninety years old. He died in 1760 at the age of ninety-one, having been in the ministry sixty-five years.

Rev. William Le Neve arrived in Virginia from England on St. Matthew's Day, 1722. He took charge of the church at Jamestown October 5, 1722, where he preached two Sundays in three Every third Sunday he preached at Mulberry Island Church, and in the afternoon he officiated as lecturer at Williamsburg. He described his living at Jamestown as worth per year about sixty pounds sterling; at Mulberry Island thirty pounds sterling, and his lecture at Williamsburg twenty pounds sterling. His congregation at James City Church consisted of about one hundred and thirty persons, that at Mulberry

Island of about two hundred, and at the lecture at Williamsburg he generally had above one hundred persons in attendance. He let the glebe by the year, and James City Parish gave him about seven pounds sterling per annum for furnishing his own house and keeping it in repair. He stated that his parish of James City was about twenty miles long and twelve miles broad, and there were in it seventy-eight families. The church was decently and orderly provided with church service. How long Mr. Le Neve served is not known, but he was living at the James City Glebe in 1737, when he published an advertisement in the *Gazette* for a manager.

Rev. William Preston represented James City Parish in the convention of the clergy in 1755. He was son of Rev. William Preston, of Brougham, Westmoreland county, England, and professor of Moral Philosophy in William and Mary College. He was a master of arts of Queen's College, Oxford University, and a great scholar. In 1757, he resigned his chair at the College because of the complaint of the College authorities that "contrary to all rule of seats of learning he had married [1] and kept his wife, children and servants in College, which occasioned much confusion and disturbance." Neither was he as abstemious from liquors as his calling required. After his return to England he was rector of Ormside. He died in 1778, aged fifty. His son, William Stephenson Preston, became rector of Warcop, in County Westmoreland, England, and this position was held by his great-grandson, Rev. Charles Mayes Preston, in 1894.

Rev. Mr. Berkeley was minister of James City Parish in 1758.

Rev. John Hyde Saunders, formerly a student of William and Mary College, from which he was expelled in 1763 for an infraction of the College rules, was minister of James City Parish in 1772. In 1773, he was elected minister of St. James, Northam, in Cumberland county, where he continued for many years. He was a great patriot during the Revolution, and in 1775 was a member of the County Committee for Cumberland.

Rev. William Bland was rector of the parish in 1774. He was a member of a family long distinguished in Virginia, ever since the arrival of the emigrant, Theodoric Bland, of Westover, in Charles City. Mr. Bland married Elizabeth, daughter of Presi-

[1] He married Mary Tyler, great aunt of President John Tyler.

dent William Yates, of William and Mary College, and she was buried at the Upper Church, in James City Parish, which was afterwards generally known as the "Church on the Main," or "Main Church."

Mr. Bland was a warm supporter of the Revolution, which brought him into notice. He afterwards served as minister in Norfolk, about 1791. From him is descended General Roger A. Pryor, formerly of Virginia, now of New York.

Rev. James Madison, D. D., preached at the "Main Church," during most of his ministry. He was a cousin of James Madison, the eminent President of the United States. Like his distinguished relative, he was a man of consummate ability, and as first Bishop of the Episcopal Church, President of the College, and professor of Natural Philosophy and Mathematics, and afterwards of Political Economy and International Law, he was necessarily a man of influence. He was an ardent patriot of the American Revolution, and of an original and tireless genius. The story is told of him that in his sermons and prayers he would never speak of heaven as a kingdom, but as that "great republic, where there was no distinction of class, and where all men were free and equal."

He was born August 27, 1749, was educated at the College, and died March 6, 1812. He lies buried in the College chapel.

Long before his death, the congregation at the Main had almost dwindled away. There were two reasons for this. Population had withdrawn from the rivers, and the old plantations situated thereon had fallen into the hands of a few rich proprietors like the Amblers of Jamestown. Then, most of the people had abandoned the Episcopal faith, and become members of the Baptist and Methodist denominations. The little remnant of Episcopalians soon ceased to meet at all. The church on the island had long before fallen into ruins, and gradually the Main Church fell into ruins also. Now scarcely is there enough brick left to tell the site of the building, which often echoed the voice of one of the best and purest of men—James Madison, the honored President of William and Mary College.

VII.

BLOCK-HOUSES.

IN early American history the block-house was universally used as a means of defence against the Indians. It was a structure made of heavy logs, having its sides loop-holed for musketry.

The first block-house at Jamestown was erected in the spring of 1609. It was built at the beginning of the neck connecting the island with the mainland, and was kept by a garrison, who prevented all ingress or egress, without the president's order. Near the block-house in 1639 was a brick-kiln, and "near the brick-kiln Alexander Stomar, brickmaker," patented an acre of land. It lay on the neck, and was "24 perches in length, and 7½ in breadth, and was bounded on the west by James River, on the north side by a little swamp, on the east by Back River, and on the south side stood two persimmon trees." The breadth must have been the width of the neck at the island side, *i. e.*, 116¼ feet.

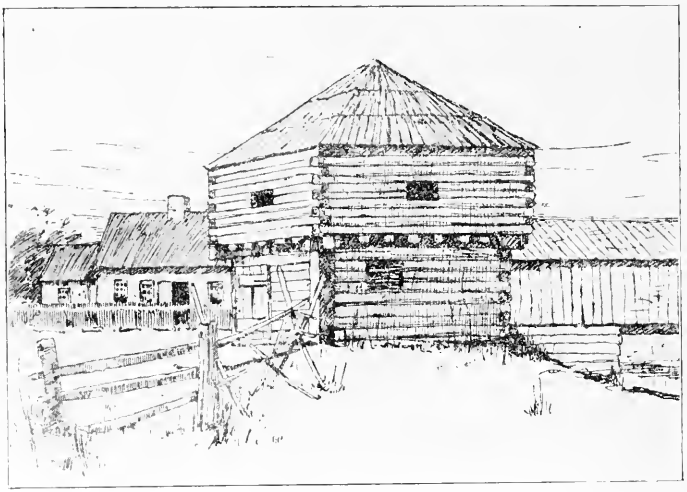
The elevated ground in this locality is referred to in 1694 in a patent to William Sherwood as Block-house Hill.

When Sir Thomas Gates arrived in May, 1610, during the horrors of the "Starving Time," he found the Indians as fast killing without the fort as the famine and pestilence within. "Only the block-house (somewhat regarded) was the safetie of the remainder that lived; which yet could not have preserved them now many dayes longer from the watching, subtile and offended Indians who (it is most certain) knew all this theire weakness, and forbare too timely to assault the forte, or hazard themselves in a fruitless warr on such whome they were assured in short time would of themselves perish, and being provoked, their desperate condition myght draw forth to a valiaunt defence, yet were they so ready and prepared, that such whome they found of our men stragled single beyond the bounds, at any time, of

L. of C.

the Block-house, they would fiercely charge (for all their pieces) as they did 2 of our people not many dayes before Sir Thomas Gates was come in, and 2 likewise they killed after his arrival four or five dayes."

When Sir Thomas Dale arrived, on the 19th of May, 1611, besides other works undertaken by him was a second block-house, "on the north side of our Back River, to prevent the Indians from killing our cattle." The description here should be taken to mean "on the Back River, on the north side of the island."



A BLOCK-HOUSE.

[*Winsor's Narrative and Critical History of America.*]

A block-house on the northern side of the Back River would have been too exposed and remote. Nobody was living in that quarter then.

So Ralph Hamor, writing in 1615, spoke of two block-houses within the island, "to observe and watch lest the Indians, at any time, should swim over the Back River and come into the island."

A patent to Thomas Sully, of the *Neck of Land*, yeoman, August 14, 1624, described his lot of six acres as "butting eastward upon a piece of ground called the block-house field, cleared in the time of the government of Sir Thomas Gates, westward,

extending to the path leading to the new block-house lately built, northward and upon a great marsh of the Back River and southward unto the marks there appointed, close to the highway of the swamp."

Before 1624, a third block-house was erected. It was standing in 1644, since in that year Richard Brooks obtained a grant for one acre in James City, "neare the Block-house, bounded west upon the river, east upon the marsh, north upon the block-house land, and south upon the land of Edward Challis." In the same year Challis patented an acre "west upon the river, east upon the marsh, north upon the block-house land and south towards the land of Radulph Spraggins." Spraggins had an acre "north towards the way leading to the Main, west upon the river and east towards the land of Mr. Hampton." These bounds locate the third block-house, beyond question, as near the isthmus, or connecting neck of the island.

VIII.

GLASS-HOUSE.

THE Second Supply reached Jamestown in October, 1608, and brought eight Dutchmen and Poles to teach the colonists how to make glass, tar, pitch and soap ashes. They were "skillful workmen from foreign parts." Soon after a house for the manufacture of glass was erected in the woods on the other side of the isthmus, or neck, about a half a mile from Jamestown.

Near the glass-house, in February, 1609, Captain John Smith, then President, had a hand to hand fight with Wochinchopunck, the chief of the Paspaheghs. He had gone to the glass-house to apprehend one of the Dutchmen, who, sent to Powhatan to build him a house, had employed much of his time in training the Indians to use firearms. Returning from the glass-house alone, Smith encountered the Indian chief by the way, probably on the isthmus. The Indian, seeing that Smith had only his sword, tried to shoot him, but Smith prevented the attempt by grappling with him at once. The Indian dragged Smith into the water to drown him, but the President got such a hold on his throat that he nearly strangled him to death. Smith finally drew his sword to cut off the Indian's head, but Wochinchopunck begged so piteously for his life that Smith relented, and took him prisoner to Jamestown, whence he shortly after escaped. After that he continued his devilish practices. He and his warriors would lie in wait near the glass-house and cut off such of the whites as ventured too far. He was one of the "mightiest and strongest salvages," that Powhatan had under him.

At length, on the 9th of February, 1610, during the "Starving Time," Captain George Percy, Acting-Governor of Virginia, sent forth Ensign Powell and Ensign Waller to surprise him, and bring him, if possible, alive to town; but finding that they could not do this, Ensign Powell rushed upon him, and "thrust him through with an arming sword." The savages, "with a mighty

quickness and speed of foot," recovered the werowance's body, and carried it off with a horrible yelling and howling. But Lieutenant Puttock, of the Block-house, followed hard upon them, and closing with one of his "cronockoes," or chief men, threw him down, and, with his dagger, sent him to accompany his master in the other world.

After this time nothing more is heard of the glass-house till 1621. In that year the London Company contracted with Captain William Norton to go over to Virginia, and to carry with him four Italians and two servants, with their wives and children. Upon his arrival in Virginia he was to set up a glass furnace, and make all manner of glass, a half part of which, including all the beads made for trade with the Indians, should be the exclusive property of the company. He was to have the exclusive benefits of glass-making in the colony for seven years under the terms of his contract, and he was expected to superintend the work and instruct apprentices in the art of glass-making. Captain Norton with his men arrived in the colony soon after, but Norton dying in 1623, George Sandys, the treasurer of the colony, was placed in control of the work. In February, 1624, there were five of these glass men at the glass-house near Jamestown.

Sandys met with disappointment in his work, because of the difficulty of finding the proper kind of sand. On one occasion he sent his shallop to the falls for a supply, but not finding there the kind he wanted, he sent to the banks at Cape Henry, where he was more successful.

But the Italians had no heart in their work, and made every effort to return to Europe. Vincenzio, the foreman, broke the furnace with his crowbar, and Sandys, in the violence of his anger and disgust, went so far as to say "that a more damned crew hell never vomited." Among those enumerated in the census of 1625 as living on the Treasurer's lands were Bernardo and Vincenzio, two of the workers in glass.

The glass-house fell into disuse, and some years afterwards Sir John Harvey, the Governor, sold the twenty-four acres belonging to it to Anthony Coleman. His heir, Edward Knight, conveyed the land to John Senior, who assigned it to John Fitchett, who assigned it to John Phipps, who assigned it to William Harris; and from Harris it came to Colonel Francis Moryson, who

patented it on June 1, 1654—paying a quit rent of six pence per year, to commence seven years after the patenting.

On this ground, where an old chimney stood, probably a relic of the glass factory, stirring scenes in 1676 were witnessed. On September 13th of that year, Bacon, having marched forty miles since daybreak, came with his tired men into Paspahegh old fields, whence, advancing with a small body of cavalry on the sandy beach before the town, he fired his carbine in defiance to Governor Berkeley, and commanded his trumpeter to sound.

All the night was spent in cutting a trench and felling trees, and the sun rose on the 14th to find Bacon and his men behind a good breastwork, safe from the cannon of the ships and the town. The better to direct the movements of his troops, he stationed a constant sentry on the top of the brick chimney "to discover from thence how the men in town mounted and dismounted, posted and reposted, drew on and off, what number they were and how they moved."

On the 16th, Sir William's men made a sally with horse and foot, but Bacon's men received them so warmly that they retired in great disorder, leaving several of their men dead upon the Neck.

Then Bacon managed to get some cannon, and in order to place them in position, he sent off and captured the wives of the leading councillors—Madam Elizabeth Bacon, wife of Colonel Nathaniel Bacon, Sr.; Madam Angelica Bray, wife of Colonel James Bray; Madam Elizabeth Page, wife of Colonel John Page; Madam Anna Ballard, wife of Colonel Thomas Ballard, and other ladies, and the next morning he presented them to the view of their friends and husbands in the town, their aprons fluttering a truce from the top of his small bulwark. This ruse succeeded, and the guns having been placed in position, without a shot from town, the ladies were withdrawn, and the fire of the cannon directed upon the shipping and the works of Governor Berkeley across the neck.

The result was that, in a day or two, the Governor, despairing of success, was compelled to take to his ships at night and leave the city to its fate, which the very next night was burned to the ground by Bacon—September 19, 1676.

The exposure and hardships to which Bacon was subjected

during the wet season, in the trenches, near the site of the old glass-house, are supposed to have given him the disease of which he died on October 1, 1676, at the house of Major Thomas Pate, in Gloucester county.

On the 24th day of January, 1676-'77, Sir William Berkeley held a court-martial at Greenspring, when Colonel James Crews, Captain William Cookson, and Captain John Digby (or Derby) were sentenced to death as rebels. These men, who, as particular friends of Bacon, had been in the fight at the trenches near the glass-house, were carried to the same spot and hanged, in retaliation for their offences there, by order of Sir William Berkeley.

Among the relics of the past still picked up on the shores of Jamestown Island and the Main are beads and other trinkets of glass, probably the manufacture of this first American glass factory.

IX.

THE GOVERNOR'S HOUSE.

CAPTAIN JOHN RATCLIFFE had in the days of his presidency (September 10, 1607, to September 10, 1608) started to build a house for the Governor near the fort, but his successor, Captain Smith (president from September 10, 1608, to September 10, 1609) had stayed the work as needless; but in 1610 Sir Thomas Gates, "at the charges and by the servants of the company," erected a Governor's House of framed timbers in Jamestown.

This house was enlarged by Sir Samuel Argall in 1617, and was confirmed to the Governor's use in 1618 by instructions from the London Company to Sir George Yeardley.

In 1619, the time of the joint stock having expired, and every one of the ancient planters being free to work on his own individual account, land was assigned in different parts of the country for the support of the chief officers. Three thousand acres were assigned to the governor's office between the mouth of the Chickahominy and Jamestown. To the secretary's office a grant of six hundred acres was given, which was located first on the Eastern Shore, but later above Archer's Hope, on Archer's Hope Creek. The attempt to make these lands profitable by the labor of servants turned out a failure, and soon many leases for long terms were made at a nominal rent.[1]

In 1624, mention is made of a park to the west of Sir George Yeardley's lot, which lay on the north side of Pitch and Tar Swamp, and ran back to Back River.

In 1632, Sir John Harvey, then Governor, complained that he had spent much time in planting English grain and vines, and

[1] William Drummond had one of these leases, and got in a quarrel about it with Sir William Berkeley—the beginning of their animosities to one another.

THE GOVERNOR'S HOUSE—GREENSPRING.

that he might as well be called "the host as the Governor of Virginia," since he had to dispense the hospitality of the island. In 1640, mention is made that his house, or one of his houses, had been used as a court-house for the colony.

Sir William Berkeley (Governor from 1642 to 1652, and from 1660 to 1677) owned houses in the island, but, unlike his predecessors, his main residence was in the country, at Greenspring, near "Powhatan's Tree."

In 1614, on the marriage of Pocahontas, a peace was concluded with the Indians which lasted for many years. The words of the peace had been stamped in brass, and at Opechancanough's request, had been fixed on one of his noted oaks. "Powhatan's Tree," on Powhatan Swamp, four miles from Jamestown, was probably this tree. There is a large tree in that vicinity, known to many people as Cornwallis's Tree, which may have been "Powhatan's Tree."

Greenspring took its name from a "very fine, green spring that is upon the land," which was reported to be "so very cold that 'tis dangerous drinking thereof in summer time."

This spring is still one of the attractions of the place.

This estate was granted to Sir William Berkeley by the Quarter Court in Virginia on June 4, 1643. It comprised at first nine hundred and eighty-four acres, but it was subsequently increased to one thousand and ninety acres.

Berkeley had a brick house upon it of six rooms, and a large hall ten feet wide. Its present ruins are: front forty-eight feet, width forty-three feet six inches. It formerly had two wings, one of which is standing, in length twenty-six feet two inches, breadth sixteen feet six inches. The walls of the main building, above the water table, are two and one-half bricks thick in front, and two bricks thick on the sides. The fire-places are four feet one inch wide, and extend back three feet eight inches. There is a central chimney, which is seven feet wide.

The lawn at Greenspring was beautifully terraced, and there were hot-houses in which oranges and other southern plants were grown. Three successive Philip Ludwells owned the place, and on March 18, 1751, while a guest of the last Philip Ludwell, Hon. John Blair wrote that "he gathered oranges there."

The last Philip Ludwell left three daughters, the eldest of

whom, Hannah Philippa, born at Greenspring, December 21, 1737, married Hon. William Lee, minister of the United States at the courts of Vienna and Berlin. He resided at Greenspring in his latter days, where he cleared the whole of Powhatan Swamp for a meadow and lived in great style and affluence.

Lord Culpeper, who became Governor in 1680, was a cousin of Lady Frances Berkeley, who married the first Colonel Philip Ludwell. He had his residence, while in the colony, at Greenspring, which he rented for one hundred and fifty pounds sterling.

His successor, Lord Howard, of Effingham, who was Governor from 1684 to 1688, had his residence for the most part with Colonel Ralph Wormeley, at Rosegill, on the Rappahannock.

Sir Francis Nicholson and Sir Edmund Andros lived at Jamestown, but when, in 1699, the capital was transferred to Williamsburg, Sir Francis Nicholson, who was then serving his second term, lived at Mr. Young's house in Williamsburg.

Soon after a large brick house for the Governor, called the *Palace,* was erected at Williamsburg. It had a handsome cupola, which was lit up at night on public occasions; there was a green lawn in front, and the grounds around were beautifully adorned with ponds, gardens and terraces.

The Palace was burned during the Revolution. The grounds are now the property of William and Mary College. Upon them is the school-house, representing the charity of Mrs. Mary Whaley. After the collapse of Bacon's Rebellion, Richard Lawrence, Thomas Whaley and John Forth, Bacon's friends, fled to the woods "in snow ancle deep," and were never heard of again. But Thomas Whaley left in York county a son, James Whaley. He married Mary Page, daughter of Matthew Page, and niece of Colonel John Page. They had an only son, Matthew, who died while a child. Thereupon, "to eternalize Mattey's name forever," Mrs. Whaley established a free school in 1706. This school is now known as the "Matthew Whaley Model and Practice School of William and Mary College."

X.

STATE HOUSE.

THE first General Assembly of Virginia, in 1619, held its meetings in the timber church, within the old Jamestown fort. How long the General Asssembly continued to meet there I do not know. The General Court (which meant the Council sitting as the Supreme Court) occupied, during Harvey's administration, one of his houses on the island, and this house, "with the granary, garden and orchard appertaining, and also one plot of ground lying and being on the west side of said capital and messuage as the same is now enclosed," was in 1640 ordered by the Council to be sold to pay the claims of his numerous creditors.

In January, 1639, Sir John Harvey wrote that a levy had been laid by the General Assembly for building a State House. This levy was first authorized by the Assembly, which met February 20, 1636-'37, and it was confirmed by the Assembly which met February 20, 1637-'38. On January 6, 1639-'40, another act was passed in aid of these. It provided for various objects: Ten pounds of tobacco per poll for the support of ministers, each minister to maintain himself, clerk and sexton; three pounds per poll for the Muster Master General;[1] three pounds per poll for the Captain of the Fort and ten guards; two pounds of tobacco for building a new fort at Point Comfort, and two pounds per poll for *building a State House*.

There is a grant of one acre to John White, dated August 28, 1644, "bounded west upon the church-yard, east upon the land appertaining to the State House, north upon the land of Mr. Thomas Hampton, and south upon James River, the length of the lot being twenty-three poles, and the breadth seven poles almost." There is a lease in 1643 for one-half an acre to Cap-

[1] Capt. John West, brother of Lord Delaware.

tain Robert Hutchinson, anciently belonging to Mr. Samuel Mole, bounded south upon the river, north towards Passbyhaes,[1] west upon the land of John Osborne and towards the State House. There is a grant for one acre to Radulph Spraggins in 1614, "north towards the way leading to the Main, west upon the river, and east towards the land of Mr. Hampton." All of which shows that the State House and the framed church were near the west end of the island, above the present church.

This first State House was not long in use, since, in October, 1660, his Honor Sir William Berkeley was asked by the General Assembly to contract for a State House, and in 1663 it was complained that both the Quarter Court and General Assemblies were held in ale-houses, which involved much expense, and was not at all a seemly thing. Abstracts of three deeds of Sir William Berkeley, dated April 3, 1670, once on record in the General Court, show that the State House was destroyed by fire, and that it was the middle building of three, each forty feet by twenty, all of which were generally referred to as the "State House." This fire probably occurred before 1656, since in December of that year Thomas Woodhouse, who was doubtless an ordinary keeper, was ordered by the Assembly twenty-five hundred pounds of tobacco "for the quarter court, sitting at his house two courts, and for the committee's accommodation."

By the terms of the deeds mentioned Sir William conveyed the ruins of all three buildings to Henry Randolph, of Henrico, and the westernmost, sold for twenty-five pounds sterling, was described as "the remains, foundations and brick work of a certain house or messuage that was burned, forty feet long by twenty feet broad, being the westernmost part of the ruined fabric, or building adjoining the old State House, which said ruined messuage was formerly in the occupation of Richard Bennett, Esq.," including half an acre of land adjacent.

In 1655, Sir William Berkeley had sold, for twenty-seven thousand five hundred pounds of tobacco, to Richard Bennett, Esq., his house in James City, "lately in the tenure of William Whitby,

[1] Paspahegh or the Main, as it was indifferently called, was the land on the other side of the connecting neck, where was laid out in 1624 the Governor's land of 3,000 acres, which was leased in part to Capt. Robert Hutchinson and others.

being the westernmost of *three* brick houses which I there built." The buildings in Jamestown appear to have been united together in this way in order to economize brick by saving two walls in every six necessary for separate structures.

Henry Randolph did not retain the buildings long, for on the 7th of April, 1671, he sold the westernmost fabric to Thomas Ludwell and Thomas Stegg, the middle building to Nathaniel Bacon, Sr., executor of Miles Cary, deceased, and the eastern building with one-half acre adjoining (said to have been formerly in the occupation of Thomas Bailey) to Colonel Thomas Swann.

There is a grant to Ludwell and Stegg, dated January 1, 1667, of one-half acre in James City, lying on the river side, and adjoining to the westernmost of those three houses, "all which joyntly were formerly called by the name of the State House," beginning "close to the wall where the said westernmost house joines to the middle house, thence running southwesterly 34 degrees 67 feet to high-water mark, thence northwesterly 56 degrees up the river side 120 feet, thence northeasterly 34 degrees 181 feet and a half, thence southeasterly 56 degrees 120 feet, thence southwesterly again 34 degrees through the said old State House, and the partition wall dividing the said westernmost house and middle house, 114 feet and a halfe to the place where it began."

It appears from this grant that the State House stood on the shore sixty-seven feet from high-water mark.

A new State House being necessary, we have seen that Sir William Berkeley was asked by the General Assembly, in October, 1660, to contract for a new one. How long it took to erect the building I do not know. In 1663 the General Assembly and General Court held their sessions at an ale-house, so it was not completed then. It was certainly completed some time before Bacon's Rebellion in 1676, when it was the scene of a striking incident in our colonial history.

Governor Berkeley had proclaimed Nathaniel Bacon, Jr., a rebel, because he had marched against the Indians without a commission. On Bacon's return from the march, he had been elected by the people of Henrico a delegate to the General Assembly which met at Jamestown on June 5, 1676. Bacon went to Jamestown, and was arrested by Berkeley, but he was soon after-

wards released and promised a commission. Not getting it as soon as he expected, and fearing foul play, he privately left the town, and went back to his plantation at Curls Neck. Here his friends rallied about him, and presently finding himself with a sufficient force, he returned to Jamestown to compel the grant of the commission, which had been so long denied to him.

The Governor at first proposed to defend the place, but finding his friends lukewarm in his defence, soon gave up the notion. On the 23d of June, Bacon marched unopposed into the town, and, sending squads of troops to secure the fort, the ferry and the neck by which he had crossed, drew up the rest of his forces on the green before the State House, where the Governor, Council and Burgesses were then assembled. Having so done, he sent into the State House to know if they would now grant him a commission. Sir William Berkeley, thereupon, came out, and at first angrily refused the demand. He dramatically tore open his breast and cried out, "Here, shoot me—fore God, fair mark," frequently repeating the words; but Bacon only replied, "No, may it please your Honor, I come not, nor intend, to hurt a hair of your head, but I come for a commission against the heathen, who are daily spilling our brethren's blood, and a commission I will have before I go." The Governor offered to measure swords with him, but Bacon declined to fight him, and told him to put his sword up; and then growing tired of the interview, he turned to his soldiers and said, "Make ready, present." The soldiers promptly directed their pieces to the windows of the State House, crowded with Burgesses and Councillors.

Some of these, seeing their danger, cried out to the soldiers, "For God's sake, hold your hands and forbear a little, and you shall have what you please." Thereupon, there was much hurrying and solicitation, and the Governor was finally induced to consent to give the commission which Bacon demanded.

After this, Bacon, who had now obtained what he wanted, left town with his soldiers, and marched up to the falls of the river, preparatory to going out a second time against the Indians. However, he had not gone a very long time before Berkeley again proclaimed him a rebel, and tried to raise the train-bands of Gloucester county to fight him. Bacon hurried down again, but the train-bands deserted Berkeley, and he had to hie away to Accomac.

After holding a convention of the leading men of the colony at Middle Plantation, where he made them take an oath to support him against Berkeley, and, indeed, against any forces sent out from England, Bacon went after the Pamunkeys and routed them in the freshes of York River.

Returning again to the settlements, he learned that Sir William had arrived from Accomac, and was entrenched in Jamestown Island. Without a moment's hesitation, Bacon marched his tired troops down again to Jamestown, and reaching Greenspring stopped for a short time to make a speech to his soldiers in the "old fields" there, concluding with the words, "Come on, my hearts of gold; he that dies in the field of battle, sleeps on the bed of honor." Promptly resuming his march, he next rested about three miles beyond, in Paspahegh old fields, where the ancient settlement called Argall's Town had once stood, about a mile from Jamestown. Finding the isthmus on the island side commanded by cannon, he entrenched himself that night (September 13th), near the site of the old glass-house opposite, and laid siege. Three days later a battle was fought on the neck, in which fourteen men were killed, after which, Governor Berkeley's soldiers becoming disheartened, they took ship and abandoned the town to Bacon.

Bacon entered without further opposition, and, calling a council of his leading friends, decided to burn the town as a military necessity.

Among the houses to perish at this time was the lately erected State House. William Drummond, Bacon's friend, took the precaution to save the records in the secretary's office—while he showed his devotion to Bacon by setting fire to his own house.

The burning of the town was a great discouragement to the General Assembly, and after Bacon's war they had some thought of building the next State House at Tindall's Point (now called Gloucester Point), but they finally were persuaded to rehabilitate Jamestown and to restore the State House.

The contract for the rebuilding was given to Colonel Philip Ludwell, the rich proprietor of Greenspring, who had married Governor Berkeley's widow, Frances Culpeper. The State House was not habitable, however, till 1685, and for the last year or two the public courts and assemblies were held at the ordinary of

Mr. Gauler. I quote from the journal of the House of Burgesses:

November 2, 1685. The Assembly met at the State House. Its hours were from eleven A. M. to five P. M.

December 4, 1685. Mr. Auditor Bacon was ordered to pay "Col. Philip Ludwell £400 sterling out of y^e^ money accruing from y^e^ duty of three pence p^r^ gallon upon liquors for and in consequence of rebuilding y^e^ State House, upon payment of which money M^r^ Auditor is desired to take bond from Col. Ludwell for y^e^ full compleating of y^e^ House in such manner as shall be fully satisfactory to his Excellency, y^e^ Councill, and y^e^ House of Burgesses, answerably good and equivalent to the condition of y^e^ same."

"Resolved by ye House that ye Room in ye State House, called ye Porch Chamber, be kept and appropriated an office for ye Clerk of ye Assembly, and yt Robert Beverly ye present Clerk take possession thereof, and therein Lodge and place all Records, Books, and Papers belonging to ye Assembly which either now are, or for ye time to come, shall be committed to his charge, keeping, or custody."

His Excellency, the Governor, was asked "to have the room in the State House opposite to the court-house room fitted with all expedition for the Secretary of State, and that Col. Ludwell be treated with about it."

Railings were ordered to be placed about the State House, and the rails and banisters were to be of locust or cedar wood, "laid double in oyle for the forepart of y^e^ State House."

A good, substantial prison-house was ordered to be built in the town at the charge of the country (public), and to be paid for out of the imposition of three pence per gallon on liquors "next after Col. Philip Ludwell is satisfied for y^e^ countries house to hold Assemblies and General Courts."

The third State House, as well as the second, seems to have been in the vicinity of the first, although further back from the river. In 1656, while the first State House was standing, John Bauldwin patented ten acres on the river at the western shore of the island, which land was said to be bounded on the south by a slash of Pitch and Tar Swamp, separating it from the State House. In 1690 this land was included in a grant to William Sherwood, and was spoken of as beginning at the head of a branch of Pitch and Tar Swamp, "next above the State House." This

slash and branch of Pitch and Tar Swamp were undoubtedly the low ground along which runs a ditch to the river on the west, not far from the old isthmus. The embankment on the river side alone prevents the waters of the river from entering the island at that point. The grant to Sherwood in 1690 included a lot of twelve acres originally patented on the Back Street of the town in 1628 by Dr. John Pott, fronting twenty-five poles on the north side of the said Back Street, seventy poles from Back River. In 1694, Philip Ludwell, who was brother and heir of Thomas Ludwell, obtained a patent for one and one-half acres "adjoining the ruins of the three brick houses between the State House and the country house, beginning near Pitch and Tar Swamp, eight chains (two poles, or thirty-one feet to a chain) of the easternmost end of said houses, and running by the said end south two degrees, westerly sixteen chains, and thence north eighty-eight degrees, westerly three and three-quarters chains, thence north two degrees, easterly sixteen chains by the other end of the said houses, and thence south eighty-eight degrees, easterly three and three-quarters chains to the place it began.

These grants of land seem to show that the State House was distant about eight chains, or two hundred and forty-eight feet from Pitch and Tar Swamp.

Once more the flames attacked Jamestown, and this time with consequences fatal to the town. On October 31, 1698, the State House was consumed by fire.

After this the seat of government was removed to Williamsburg, in 1699, and a brick building in the form of an H, too pretentious in the eyes of Governor Francis Nicholson to be called a "State House," was erected at that place. It was the first Capitol so-called in the United States. As three State Houses were destroyed by fire in Jamestown, so two Capitols suffered by the same destructive agent in Williamsburg. The first Capitol was burned in 1746, and the second in 1832.

In 1706, the people of James City county were permitted by the General Assembly to use the bricks of the old State House at Jamestown to construct their new county court-house at Williamsburg.

There is a brick chimney still standing on the site of the old court-house lot in Williamsburg, which was probably erected from the ruins at Jamestown.

XI.

POLITICAL DIVISIONS.

THE political units in Virginia were at first separate settlements, named variously cities, towns, hundreds,[1] and plantations. The settlers were mostly city people, and they expected society to develop as in England, and as it actually did in New England.[2] The cultivation of tobacco, however, provoked separation and isolation, and society became from the first distinctly agricultural and rural.

The charters provided that during the first few years all charges of settling and maintaining the plantation should be borne in a *joint stock;* so that every man in Virginia had to act as a servant of the Company during that time. In 1619, everybody was free to pursue his own individual labors, and the time arrived for a distribution of the lands. In order to meet the changed state of affairs a new political organization was deemed necessary. The plantations were located in four large corporations, with a capital city in each:

I. The Corporation of Elizabeth City (capital, Elizabeth City), extending from the bay up the river, on the south side, to about Chuckatuck Creek, and on the north side to above Newport News.

II. The Corporation of James City (capital, Jamestown), extending on the south side from about Nansemond River to Upper Chippokes Creek, and on the north side from Newport News to the Chickahominy River.

III. The Corporation of Charles City (capital, Charles City, at the present City Point), extending, on the south side, from

[1] A hundred was a division of a county in England supposed to contain a hundred families.

[2] The representatives of the counties in the General Assembly were called Burgesses, because boroughs were first represented at Jamestown.

Upper Chippokes Creek to the beginning of the pale run by Dale, between the Appomattox and James Rivers, so as to include Bermuda Hundred and Jones' Neck, and on the north side to Farrar's Island.

IV. The Corporation of Henrico (capital, Henrico, on Farrar's Island), extending from Charles City Corporation to the falls.

All settlements were in 1619 on or very near James River.

Each corporation contained one or more boroughs, and each borough was represented by two burgesses in the General Assembly, for the first time called in 1619.

This system continued till 1634, when borough representation was entirely abandoned. The economic forces at work in Virginia were those of separation instead of consolidation. In 1634 the whole of the country was divided into eight counties or shires, and all of these but two—Accomac, on the Eastern Shore, over the Bay, and Charles River county, subsequently York county, on York River—were situated on James River, as follows:

I. Elizabeth City county, extending on both sides of the river—on the south side to Chuckatuck Creek, and on the north side to Newport News, and including a small part thereof.

II. Warascoyack county, subsequently, in 1637, Isle of Wight county, extending, on the south side, from Chuckatuck Creek to Lawne's Creek.

III. Warwick county, extending, on the north side, from Elizabeth City county to Skiffes Creek.

IV. James City county, extending on both sides of the river—on the south side from Lawne's Creek to Upper Chippokes Creek, and on the north side from Skiffes Creek to above Sandy Point.

V. Charles City county, extending on both sides of the river—on the south side from Upper Chippokes Creek to Appomattox River, and on the north side from Sandy Point to Turkey Island Creek.

VI. Henrico county, extending from Charles City county indefinitely westward.

In 1637, the south part of Elizabeth City county was made into New Norfolk county, which immediately after was divided into Lower Norfolk county and Upper Norfolk county (called in

1645-'46 Nansemond county). In 1691, Lower Norfolk county was divided into Princess Anne and Norfolk counties.

In 1652, the south part of James City county was formed into Surry county. In 1702, the south part of Charles City county was formed into Prince George county. In 1720, the Chickahominy was made the boundary of James City and Charles City counties. In 1748, the southern part of Henrico was formed into Chesterfield county.

XI.

JAMES RIVER.

(Named for King James I.)

ORIGIN OF THE NAMES OF PLACES.

[The distance of Point Comfort to Richmond by the river is about 110 miles. The distance from Cape Henry to Richmond is about 127 miles.]

SOUTH SIDE.

Cape Henry.

Named in honor of Henry, Prince of Wales, son of James I. The cape opposite was called Cape Charles in honor of Prince Charles, another son, afterwards King Charles I. At Cape Henry, on April 26, 1607, the first settlers made their first landing. Three days later they set up a cross.

Lynnhaven Bay.

It appears on Smith's map as Morton's Bay, because here Matthew Morton and Captain Gabriel Archer were wounded by the Indians, April 26, 1607. Present name derived from the town of Lynn, in England.

Willoughby's Sand-Spit.

Named from Colonel Thomas Willoughby, a member of the Council from 1644 to 1650. He belonged to the family of Lord Willoughby, Governor of Barbadoes. His descendants are numerous.

Sewell's Point.

From Henry Seawell, a burgess for Lower Norfolk county in 1639. He is represented in Virginia by the descendants of his daughter, Anne, who married Colonel Lemuel Mason.

Elizabeth River.

Named for Princess Elizabeth, daughter of King James I., and afterwards Queen of Bohemia.

Craney Island.

This place, which, during the war of 1812, was fortified as a protection to Norfolk, received its name, at a very remote date, from an early resident of Norfolk county. Admiral Cockburn, with the British fleet, attacked this place and was repulsed.

Nansemond River.

From the Indians of that name who had several towns upon it.

Naseway Shoals.

From "Lt. Col. Tristram Norsworthy, of y^e^ Ragged Islands in Virginia, Gent.," living in 1656. His name was originally pronounced "Nosory."

Pagan River.

From "Pagan Point," probably so called because of the Indian village *Mokete,* on the south side. Originally Warascoyack, and afterwards New Town Haven River.

Basse's Choice was a private plantation patented by Captain Nathaniel Basse and others on November 21, 1621. It was situated near the mouth of Pagan River, in Isle of Wight county, on the west side. It consisted of three hundred acres. Peter Knight patented it in 1640, and sold it to John Bland, who sold it to Thomas Taberer, who devised it in 1692 to his grandson, Joseph Copland, of Isle of Wight county.

Day's Point.

At the western point of Pagan River Bay; named from Captain James Day, formerly of London, who has left numerous descendants in Virginia.

Bennett's Plantation, or Warascoyack.

It was situated at the Rock Wharf on the present Burwell's Bay. Patented November 21, 1621, by Edward Bennett, a rich London merchant, in partnership with his brother, Robert Bennett, and nephew, Richard Bennett, Governor of Virginia in 1652, and others. Edward Bennett's daughter, Silvestra, married Major Nicholas Hill, of Isle of Wight county. Another daughter, Mary, married Thomas Bland, whose daughter Mary married Captain James Day, of Day's Point. This early plantation became absorbed in the estate of Major Lewis Burwell.

Burwell's Bay.

Named for Major Lewis Burwell, who married Abigail Smith, niece of Colonel Nathaniel Bacon, Sr. Burwell acquired, partly through his wife, a large estate in this quarter.

Lawne's Plantation, in Isle of Wight county, patented by Captain Christopher Lawne and his associates. Captain Lawne arrived in Virginia April 17, 1619. His plantation was situated near the mouth of Lawne's Creek, which afterwards was made the dividing line between the counties of Surry and Isle of Wight. It was represented in the first General Assembly by Captain Lawne and Ensign Washer.

Hog Island.

It obtained its name as early as 1608, being used as a place for safekeeping of hogs. Represented in the General Assembly, 1623-'24, by John Chew and John Utie, prominent colonists. John Bailey, who first settled at Berkeley Hundred in 1620, patented six hundred acres here. He died before 1624, and his only daughter and heir, Mary Bailey, marrying Randall Holt, the Island came into the Holt family, and continued their property for nearly two hundred years.

It was very much improved by the late Mr. E. E. Barney, and named "Homewood."

Lower Chippoke's Creek.

On the west of Hog Island, sometimes called Cobham Creek. Indian name. Near by is an old brick house erected probably about 1660. It is one of the oldest brick houses in Virginia. During Bacon's Rebellion it was fortified by Captain William Rookins, Robert Burgess and other friends of Bacon. The house was originally built by Mr. Arthur Allen, ancestor of Colonel William Allen, of Claremont, and is now owned by Mr. C. W. Warren. It is known as "Bacon's Castle."

College Creek.

From the College Plantation, appearing in the early records about 1635.

Cobham.

The site of an old town laid off in 1680 for a port for Surry county, at the mouth of Gray's Creek, and afterwards reëstab-

lished in 1772. It is a little west of Scotland Wharf, the terminus of the Surry, Sussex and Southampton Railroad.

Gray's Creek.

First called Rolfe's Creek after Thomas Rolfe, son of Pocahontas, who had a plantation upon it, "the gift of the Indian king." Afterwards called Gray's Creek from Thomas Gray, who patented lands there in 1639, and is ancestor of a numerous family of the name. Upon it was Smith's Fort, probably erected in 1608.

Swann's Point.

From Colonel Thomas Swann, of the Council of Sir William Berkeley (1676), son of William Swann, an early settler. His son Samuel, Speaker of the North Carolina Assembly, married Sarah, daughter of Colonel William Drummond, hanged for supporting Nathaniel Bacon, Jr., in 1676. Colonel Swann's tombstone is still to be seen in a neighboring field. Here in 1677 the commissioners sent over by the King to inquire into the causes of Bacon's Rebellion held court. This commission consisted of Colonel Herbert Jeffryes, Sir John Berry and Colonel Francis Moryson.

Four Mile Tree.

This was a plantation of two thousand acres which began at "Four Mile Tree," one of the bounds on the south side of the Corporation of James City; patented by Colonel Henry Browne, one of Sir William Berkeley's Council in 1643, and remained in the Brown family for two hundred years. He obtained one hundred and fifty acres thereof, called Smith's Mount, on the river, from the overseers of John Smith, deceased, which was "first patented by John Burrows, called by him in 1624 "Burrows' Hill." The handsome old house of the Brownes is still standing, and there is in the graveyard near by the tombstone of Alice Miles, daughter of John Miles, of Branton, Herefordshire, and wife of Colonel George Jordan, Attorney-General of Virginia in 1670. The tombstone states that Mrs. Jordan died January 7, 1650. There is only one older tombstone in Virginia—that of Colonel William Perry, at Westover, who died in 1637.

Pace's Pains.

Adjoining Four Mile Tree is Pace's Pains, an estate of six hundred acres, planted by Richard Pace, Francis Chapman and Thomas Gates. In the massacre of 1622 Richard Pace saved Jamestown and many of the colonists. A converted Christian Indian, Chanco, who stayed with him, revealed the plot; and Pace, after securing his house, rowed off to Jamestown in the early morning and informed the governor. His widow, Isabella, married, secondly, Captain William Perry, of the Council. His son and heir was George Pace; married Sarah, widow of Captain Samuel Maycock, of the Council, who was killed by the Indians in the massacre. He moved to Captain Maycock's plantation, near Powell's Creek, in Prince George county, where his son Richard was living in 1659. Richard Pace has descendants in and about Petersburg.

Sunken Marsh Creek.

This is a very old name in the records of Surry county, being found in the land books as early as 1642. In 1678 "Sunken Marsh Plantation" was one of the numerous plantations of the London merchant, John Bland, whose brother Theodorick was the founder of the prominent Virginia family of that name. Near by was "Wakefield," a home of the Harrison family.

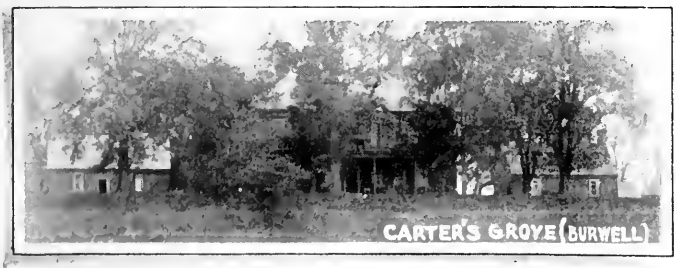
Upper Chippoke's Creek.

From the Indian. The town of Quiougheohannock was near this creek, opposite to the Paspahegh town on the other side. At a very early date Major Arthur Allen patented lands at this creek. His descendant Major William Allen, at the time of the war (1861-'65), owned twelve thousand five hundred acres stretching along the river side. It is now the site of the town of Claremont, and the wharf is the terminus of the James River Division of the Atlantic and Danville Railway.

Brandon.

There are two Brandons in Virginia—Brandon on the Rappahannock, formerly the home of the Grymes family, and Brandon on the James. The famous estate last mentioned, as rich in soil as in memories, was patented in 1617 by Captain John Martin, one of the first Council for Virginia, and the only man who had protested against the abandonment of Jamestown in 1610, after

BACON'S CASTLE


CARTER'S GROVE (BURWELL)

the "Starving Time." In 1619, he sent to the first General Assembly as burgesses from Brandon Mr. Thomas Davis and Mr. Robert Stacy, but that body would not allow them to sit, unless Martin would agree to relinquish certain high privileges, which his patent conferred. But Martin, who was then the only member of the original Council living in Virginia, declined, and said: "I hold my patent for my service don, which noe newe or late comers can meritt or challenge." Martin's grant read: "He was to enjoye his landes in as large and ample manner to all intentes and purposes as any Lord of any Manours in England doth hold his grounde." He was afterwards fortunately induced to surrender this high authority. Martin was son of Sir Richard Martin, and brother-in-law of Sir Julius Cæsar. His daughter Dorcas married Captain George Bargrave, son of Robert Bargrave, of Bridge in Kent. George Bargrave came to Virginia, and was largely interested, with his brother, John Bargrave, in the trade of the colony. Captain Robert Bargrave, as stated in a land grant in 1636-'37, sold Martin's Brandon to Symon Sturgis, John Sadler and Richard Quiney, of London, merchants. In 1643, as stated in another grant, the General Assembly confirmed to William Barker, John Sadler and Richard Quiney four thousand five hundred and fifty acres known as "Martin's Brandon, between Chippoaks Creek and Ward's Creek," due them by purchase from the heirs of Captain John Martin, deced. So this Captain Robert Bargrave was doubtless a grandson of Captain John Martin. Brandon and Merchant's Hope, or Powell Brook, became the joint property of Richard Quiney and his brother-in-law, John Sadler. The Quineys were from Stratford-on-Avon. Thomas Quiney married Judith, the daughter of William Shakespeare. Richard Quiney's wife, Ellen Sadler, daughter of John Sadler, was aunt of Anne Sadler, the wife of John Harvard, founder of Harvard College. Richard Quiney's moiety in Brandon, as well as in Powell Brook, descended to his son Thomas, who in his will left the same to his great-nephew Robert Richardson, who in 1720 conveyed the same to Nathaniel Harrison, to whom the other moiety doubtless passed about the same time from the Sadlers.

The plantation has remained in the Harrison family ever since. It is divided into two estates—Lower and Upper Bran-

don. The house at Lower Brandon contains a collection of portraits of eminent persons, formerly the property of William Byrd, of Westover.

Ward's Creek.

Captain John Ward came to Virginia in April, 1619, and was actively employed for several years with his ship in procuring fish and supplies for the colony. His patent seems to have called for twelve hundred acres on the river side, which appears to have been included in a grant to Rice Hooe in May, 1638. Ward's plantation was represented in the first General Assembly by Captain John Ward and Lieutenant John Gibbs. "Ward's Creek" perpetuates the name and site of this ancient settlement, adjoining Brandon.

Windmill Point.

This in the early records was known as Tobacco Point. It took its name from a windmill established there many years ago. The Indians appear to have called it Weyanoke Point.

Flower de Hundred.

In 1618, the London Company granted to Sir George Yeardley, then governor, all that piece of land between Mapsoc Creek and Queen's Creek, on the north side of the river in Charles City county, called Tanks Weyanoke, containing twenty-two hundred acres. The Governor's other plantation, Flower dieu Hundred, consisting of one thousand acres, was across the river, westward from this, and appears to have been on the site of the Indian village of Weyanoke. In 1619, it was represented in the first Virginia Legislature by Ensign Edward Rossingham, nephew of the Governor, and Mr. John Jefferson, ancestor of Thomas Jefferson. Sir George Yeardley, about 1626, sold both plantations to Captain Abraham Peirsey, who left two daughters, (1) Elizabeth, who married, first, Captain Richard Stephens, secondly, Sir John Harvey, Governor; (2) Mary, who married Captain Thomas Hill, and, secondly, Thomas Bushrod. Captain Richard Stephens' son, Captain Samuel Stephens, was the first husband of Lady Berkeley, wife of Sir William Berkeley, and she married, thirdly, Colonel Philip Ludwell. "Flower dieu Hundred" was changed to "Peirsey's Hundred," but in 1635 Mrs. Elizabeth

Stephens patented it as "Flower deue Hundred." Shortly after she sold it to William Barker, mariner.

At the close of the century it was owned by Captain John Taylor, of Prince George county, who devised it to his daughters, Henrietta Maria and Sarah, who married respectively John and Francis Hardiman. They sold it to Joseph Poythress, and about the close of the century it became the property of John V. Willcox, whose descendants still own it.

Maycocks.

Samuel Maycock came to Virginia about 1618. He was a graduate of the University of Cambridge, and in 1619 was made by Sir George Yeardley a member of his council, and continued as such under Sir Francis Wyatt. He was killed in the Indian massacre of 1622, when five others of the council perished. Among those who were killed at Captain Maycock's plantation of two hundred acres adjoining Flower de Hundred was Edward Lister, who came over in the *Mayflower* to Plymouth, Mass., and was a signer of the "Compact." After Captain Maycock's death, his widow Sarah married George Pace of "Pace's Paines," whose father, Richard Pace, had saved Jamestown in 1622. There is a deed in the Charles City county records by which "Richard Pace, of Powell's Creek, son and heir-apparent of George Pace, son and heire as the first issue by my mother Mrs. Sarah Macocke, wife unto my aforesaid father, both deced," confirms a sale of eight or nine hundred acres "lying near unto Pierce's Hundred als Flower due Hundred" to Mr. Thomas Drew as per bill of his father, October 12, 1650. In 1723, John Hamlin sold "Maycocks," containing two hundred and fifty acres, purchased of Roger Drayton in 1696, to Thomas Ravenscroft, of Wilmington Parish, James City county.

Powell's Creek.

Here was seated the plantation of Captain Nathaniel Powell, a valiant soldier, who came in 1607 to Virginia among the first emigrants, and acted as governor on the departure of Samuel Argall in 1619. He married a daughter of Master William Tracy, but he and his wife were both killed by the Indians March 22, 1622. Ten others were also slain in this massacre at Powell Brook. His place of six hundred acres lay on the

west of Powell's Creek. Thomas Powell, of Howellton, Suffolk county, England, yeoman, his brother and heir, sold the estate to John Taylor, "citizen and girdler," of London, who in turn disposed of it to William Barker, mariner, Richard Quiney and John Sadler, merchants of London, and they in 1638 patented it (with twelve hundred and fifty acres additional) as "Merchant's Hope, formerly known as Powle Brook." It finally passed to Nathaniel Harrison in 1720.

Near by there is still standing a very old brick church, known as Merchant's Hope Church. It has upon a brick the date 1656, supposed to have been the year of its erection. The court-house of Prince George was first seated near the church on Chappell's Creek.

Chappell's Creek.

Named for Thomas Chappell, who came to the colony in the ship of Captain William Barker in 1635. He has numerous representatives in the South.

Bicker's Creek.

Named for William Bicker, or Bykar, killed in the massacre of 1622.

Chaplin's Choice.

This place in 1619 was the plantation of Captain Isaac Chaplin, who represented it in the first House of Burgesses. It lay east of Captain Woodliffe's land, near Jordan's. In 1686 Captain Nicholas Wyatt patented it anew, describing it as in area three hundred and sixty-one acres, and as lying on James River between Parson's and Bicker's Creeks. He states that it was for a long time in the possession of his late father, Captain Anthony Wyatt. By the burning of his father's house and that of the secretary at Jamestown, the original patent to Chaplin's had been lost. Hence his application for a new patent.

Jordan's Jorney, or Beggar's Bush.

This place was situated at Jordan's Point, on James River. Captain Samuel Jordan patented four hundred and fifty acres here in 1619, bounded by Captain Woodliffe's land. Captain Jordan died in 1623, and his widow, Cicely, being left a rich widow, was eagerly sought after. Being addressed by both Cap-

tain William Farrar, kinsman of the deputy treasurer, Nicholas Farrar, and the minister of the place, Rev. Greville Pooley, she engaged to marry both, which action of hers led to so much disturbance in the colony that the Governor and Council had to issue a proclamation against any similar proceedings on the part of the ladies.

At Jordan's in 1676 the volunteers of Charles City (Prince George) had their encampment, previous to pressing Bacon into service, to lead them against the Indians.

In 1677, the place had become the property of John Bland, of London, merchant, and there it was that Richard Bland, the Antiquary, resided, the first American to show in a formal pamphlet that America had no connection with England except the tie of the crown.

Bailey's Creek.

From Temperance Bailey, who had two hundred acres thereon in 1626.

City Point.

In 1619, the colony was divided into four great corporations. There were no counties till 1634. Each corporation was to have a principal city: Elizabeth City, James City, Charles City and Henrico City. Charles City was located at the mouth of the Appomattox on the east side. It was a public settlement begun by Sir Thomas Dale about Christmas in 1613. It was first known as Bermuda City, but the name was soon changed to Charles City in honor of Prince Charles, afterwards King Charles I. In March, 1617, the three years' time of service of the incorporators of Bermuda City expired, and they being freed "with humble thanks to God, fell cheerfully to their own particular labors."

Here it was, in 1621, that the company proposed to erect the East India School, which was to be a feeder to the college at Henrico.

The place is spoken of in the records of Prince George county in 1720 as "City Point," *i. e.*, "Charles City Point." On April 24, 1781, the British force landed here under General Phillips and captured Petersburg.

In the war of 1861-'65 it was an important military depot for

Grant's army. Grant had his headquarters here. On the Appomattox is the residence of the Epes family, called "Appomattox," which has been in the Epes family since it was first patented by Colonel Francis Epes in 1635. President Lincoln was here on a visit to General Grant when Richmond was evacuated. It is connected with Petersburg by a railroad.

Appomattox River.

It received its name from the Appomattox Indians. In the Algonquin language "Appomattox" means "a sinuous tidal estuary." But as their chief town was rather below Turkey Island Bend (Presque Isle), the name Appomattox was applicable rather to the James than to the Appomattox. In the course of time the Appomattox country of the James River came to be called the "Curls of the River" by the English. Up the Appomattox is a number of fine old plantations: *Cawsons,* formerly a seat of the Blands, and the birthplace of John Randolph. *Broadway,* named for Alexander Broadway, an early settler, and *Matoax,* a mile from Petersburg, which was the residence of John Randolph, father of John Randolph of Roanoke.

Bermuda Hundred.

This place lies in Chesterfield county, near the mouth of the Appomattox across from City Point. This was laid out by Sir Thomas Dale at the time Bermuda City, or Charles City, was laid out. Dale had been wrecked not long before on the Bermuda Islands in the *Sea Venture,* and he named the place Bermuda "by reason of the strength of the situation," which likened it to those coral girt islands. He annexed to it many miles of "champion and wood land in several hundreds, as Rochedale Hundred (afterwards known as the neck of land in Charles City, and now as 'Jones' Neck'), the Upper and Nether Hundreds (Curls Neck and Bermuda), West's Sherley Hundred (Shirly) and Digges' Hundred."

In the first General Assembly the plantations of Bermuda Hundred, Sherly Hundred and Charles City were represented by Samuel Sharpe and Samuel Jordan.

On May 2, 1781, the British forces under Generals Phillips and Arnold, returning from their attack on Petersburg, embarked at Bermuda Hundred.

For many years previous to the war, before the upper portion of the river was deepened, this was an important shipping point, and was the port of Richmond for large vessels.

In 1864, General Butler, with a force of thirty thousand men, was, in the language of General Grant, "bottled up" here by the Confederates, and his troops rendered useless for offensive operations. Just outside of this peninsula may still be seen many heavy outworks thrown up by him. Bermuda Hundred is now the terminus of the Farmville and Powhatan Railroad.

Neck of Land, or Rochedale Hundred.

This place is now known as Jones' Neck. It was a part of Dale's settlement in 1613, and was first called Rochedale Hundred, afterwards "Neck of Land in Charles City" to distinguish it from "Neck of Land" in James City county. A creek on the western side still retains the name of Rochedale Creek. In 1624 there were forty-one persons living here.

On the west side of Jones' Neck is "Meadowville," the handsome estate of Mrs. Louise J. Barney, originally called "Hardings."

Gatesville.

In 1720, the name of Dale Parish was given very appropriately to that part of Henrico county on the south side of the river, the scene especially of Dale's labors.

The Glebe of Dale Parish (one hundred acres) was opposite to the present Farrar's Island, and in 1761 an act was passed authorizing the division of this land into lots for a town to be called *Gatesville* (in honor of Sir Thomas Gates, who was Sir Thomas Dale's superior officer). In April, 1781, the British forces captured and destroyed here about twenty-five vessels loaded with tobacco, flour, etc. On April 27, 1781, after a hot action with the British, the vessels of the small Virginia navy then in James River, were captured and destroyed about four miles above Gatesville. After this the little town of Gatesville ceased to be mentioned, and the wharf near by is now known as Osborne's. For a number of years this was the shipping point for coal from the Clover Hill mines, in Chesterfield county.

Sheffield's Plantation.

Three miles from Falling Creek. Thomas Sheffield was slain here in 1622.

Drewry's Bluff.

The fortifications here in 1861-'65 defended Richmond from approach by the river.

Falling Creek.

This creek was the site of the first iron works in America. In 1619, Sir Edwin Sandys informed the London Company of one Mr. King, who was to go with fifty persons to Virginia and set up iron works there, and the same year one hundred fifty expert workmen, chiefly from Warwickshire and Staffordshire, were sent over for the purpose. These works cost the company four thousand pounds, equivalent to one hundred thousand dollars in present money. They were first under the charge of Captain Bluett, who was provided with everything necessary, but, he dying shortly after his arrival, the care of the iron industry was committed to John Berkeley, son of Sir John Berkeley, of the castle and manor of Beverston, in Gloucestershire, an eminent branch of the noble family of the Berkeleys of Berkeley Castle. The iron was made from bog ore found in the vicinity, and it was reported that "no better iron existed in the world." Unfortunately, in 1622, the works were broken up by the Indians, who killed Berkeley and all his employees, except a boy and a girl, who managed to hide in the bushes. Since the year 1700, at least, there has been a grist mill on this creek, and one still exists near a picturesque little fall. Colonel Archibald Cary owned mills upon the creek at the time of the Revolution, which were destroyed by Tarleton.

Ampthill.

This was the estate of Colonel Archibald Cary, who was chairman of the committee which drafted the first Declaration of Rights and State Constitution in America in 1776. The house, a fine square brick building, is still standing.

Warwick.

The chimney standing on the right bank of the river near Ampthill marks the old site of the village of Warwick, established in the twenty-second year of the reign of George II. While the bar above the place remained in the river, it was a place of much importance. At the time of the Revolution there were here mills, warehouses, storehouses, rope-walks and a ship-building yard,

which were all destroyed by the British in 1781. Chastellux, who was here in 1782, describes it, nevertheless, as a charming place, "where a group of handsome houses form a sort of village, and there are several superb ones in the neighborhood, among others that of Colonel Cary, on the right bank of the river, and Mr. Randolph on the opposite shore."

Goode's Creek.

Named from John Goode, who was a supporter of Bacon in 1676. The name of his place is "Whitby," through which the creek runs.

NORTH SIDE.

The Falls and Powhatan.

After the landing at Jamestown Island, May 14, 1607, President Wingfield, in accordance with instructions from the London Company, sent a body of men in a shallop for the purpose of discovering the river above them. They left Jamestown on May 21, 1607, under Captain Newport, and reached an island three miles distant from the falls. Opposite to this island, on a high hill separated from the river by a meadow of two hundred acres, in which were planted Indian corn, tobacco, pumpkins, gourds and other vegetables, was an Indian village called Powhatan, consisting of about ten or twelve houses. The description of the place corresponds, Mr. Traylor thinks, with either the present "Marion Hill," or "Tree Hill" plantation. This was the native country of the Indian Werowance Powhatan, but the chief here at this time was Parahunt, a son of Powhatan, called Tanxpowhatan (Little Powhatan).

After the arrival of the *Third Supply* in August, 1609, Captain John Smith, in the absence of Sir Thomas Gates, the new governor, who was wrecked on the Bermuda Islands, sent Captain Francis West with one hundred men to form a settlement at the falls. West purchased a site from the Indians, and called his settlement Fort West. After a time Captain John Smith came up the river, and finding West absent ordered the settlers to move to the hill on which the Indian town was situated, which he purchased from the Indians, and called Nonsuch.[1] After a

[1] Smith states that his purchase price for Nonsuch was some copper and a promise to protect the Tanx Powhatan from the Monacans or

while West returned, and not liking this interference of Smith's, ordered the company back to their original settlement. But here they were attacked by the Indians, and the settlement was abandoned altogether.

After the second massacre, in 1644, a fort was built near this place. It was rebuilt in 1676.

Finally Captain William Byrd became possessed of much of the land in this vicinity; and his son, Colonel William Byrd, had at the falls several mills. In 1742, Richmond, having been surveyed by Col. William Mayo, was established as a town on land belonging to Colonel Byrd. A mile below is a place called Powhatan, long the home of the Mayos, who came from Barbadoes to Virginia.

Allmond's Creek.

Two and a half miles below the falls; called from Samuel Allmond, who patented lands there in 1639.

Tree Hill.

Formerly the residence of Colonel Miles Selden (died May 18, 1811), and for a long time celebrated for its race-track.

Chatsworth.

This was formerly the seat of Colonel Peter Randolph (son of Colonel William Randolph, Jr.), member of the Council and Surveyor-General of the Customs (died 1767). The last male of this immediate branch was Mr. William B. Randolph, who died since the war. This was the birthplace of Beverly Randolph, Governor of Virginia; of Colonel Robert Randolph, of *Eastern View*, Fauquier county, Va., ancestor of the present Bishop Randolph, of Virginia, and also the birthplace of Mrs. Fitzhugh, of "Chatham," grandmother of Mrs. General Robert E. Lee.

Wilton.

Colonel William Randolph, son of Colonel William Randolph, of Turkey Island, built the present brick mansion early in the eighteenth century. It stands nearly opposite to Falling Creek,

Manakins who lived above the falls, but Henry Spelman says that Smith sold him for the place. Probably both stories are true. Smith attached but little importance to a small boy like Spelman, and handed him over without compunction, and did not deem the matter worth mentioning. Spelman naturally viewed the matter differently.

on the other side. The best known of his descendants who lived here was Innes Randolph, the poet, and Anne Randolph, who married Colonel Benjamin Harrison, of Brandon, who was a member of the first State Executive Council (1776). She was a noted belle of the period just prior to the Revolution, and was referred to as Nancy Wilton.

Chaffin's Bluff.

Fortified by the Confederates in 1861-'65. Next below is "Newstead," location of the Confederate signal station.

Farrar's Island and Dutch Gap.

In June, 1611, Sir Thomas Dale went up James River to search for a new site for the chief town, the London Company having become dissatisfied with Jamestown. The Privy Council had already named the proposed site, "Henrico," in honor of Henry, oldest son of King James I. In September, 1611, with permission from Sir Thomas Gates, who had in the meantime arrived as Governor, Dale went up to Henrico, and began the settlement on the Peninsula (now an island), known afterwards as Farrar's Island, after William Farrar, who patented it. He cut a ditch across the neck (Dale's Dutch Gap), such as he had learned to make while campaigning in Holland, and strongly faced it with palisades. There were in the town three streets of well-framed houses, and a church of timber. The foundations of the houses were of brick made on the spot by the brickmakers brought by Gates from England. For the town's security, there were five blockhouses upon the verge of the river. In the main, two miles from the town, they ran a pale from river to river two miles long. Across the river they impaled the bend west of Henrico called Coxendale, which was secured by several forts, called Charity Fort, Mount Malado, being a retreat or guests' home for sick people; Elizabeth Fort, and Fort Patience. In Coxendale Mr. Alexander Whitaker, son of the celebrated Dr. William Whitaker, a Puritan divine, had his parsonage. Bermuda City was distant from Henrico by water fourteen miles, but by land only five miles.

In the first General Assembly Henrico and Coxendale, together with Arahateck just above Henrico, was represented by John Dowse and John Polentine. But the place did not flourish, and

in 1619 it was reported as containing only "two or three old houses, a poore ruinated church, with some few poor buildings in the island." Indeed, the tendency of Virginia life, due to the cultivation of tobacco, was to the country, and not to the city.

At Henrico it was proposed in 1618 to build a college, and ten thousand acres of land were appropriated to the purpose. The first rector was to be the Rev. Patrick Copland, while George Thorpe was made superintendent of the buildings and plantation. The Indians in 1622 put a stop to the project by almost wiping the place out of existence. So the project was abandoned, and Virginia waited many years for a college. Finally, in 1693, Dr. James Blair, who was minister of this same parish from 1685 to 1694, inspired doubtless by the early memories of the place, consummated the original design, though the General Assembly chose Williamsburg, many miles distant from Henrico, as the seat of the college.

In this locality the river curls about in great loops, and to avoid the Confederate battery at the extreme end of Farrar's Island, called Howlett's Battery, General Butler attempted, in 1864, to deepen Dale's old ditch, so as to admit a passage from the rear to the river above. The work, however, owing to the Confederate sharp-shooters, was not completed at this time, but in 1871-'72 engineers deepened it to its present practicable condition.

Varina, or Aiken's Landing.

A little more than a mile below the Dutch Gap Canal is *Varina,* so named, it is said, because of the superior character of the tobacco raised in the neighborhood, which resembled a high-price Spanish tobacco called *Varina.* This was long the county-seat of Henrico, and here, it is said, resided, after their marriage, John Rolfe and Pocahontas. At Varina was also the Glebe of Henrico Parish, where resided James Blair, who founded William and Mary College, and William Stith, another of its presidents, who wrote the History of Virginia. Some forty years ago the sites of the glebe, court-house, jail and tavern were pointed out. Under the name of Aiken's Landing, Varina was well known during the war of 1861-'65 as a place of exchange of prisoners.

Four Mile Creek.

Opposite to the point of "The Neck of Land," or Jones' Neck. It receives its name from its distance—four miles—from Henrico (Farrar's Island).

Curls Neck.

This place obtains its name from the "curls" of the river, which twists about in this locality in a most surprising manner. To go six miles from Farrar's Island to City Point, the river takes a course of sixteen miles. Curls Neck was at first divided into a number of small farms, which gradually became consolidated. Chief among the inhabitants here in 1676 was the famous Nathaniel Bacon, Jr. In 1698, William Randolph of Turkey Island patented "two certain tracts of land in the county of Henrico—one tract called Curles, formerly Longfield, the other called the Slashes," containing together twelve hundred and thirty acres, "*late in the seizin and inheritance of Nathaniel Bacon, Jun., Esq., deced, and found to escheat to his most sacred Majesty by the attainder of the said Nathaniel Bacon, Junr., of high treason.*" William Randolph purchased the land for one hundred and fifty pounds. "Longfield," originally containing four hundred acres, was first patented by Edward Gurgany October 1, 1617, and was bequeathed, in 1619, by his widow, Ann Gurgany, to Captain Thomas Harris, who patented it with three hundred acres additional in July, 1637.

William Randolph, of Turkey Island, became the owner of a large part of the Neck, and he left it to his son, Richard Randolph, grandfather of John Randolph of Roanoke. In later years the estate, containing three thousand acres, became one of the numerous plantations of Major William Allen, of Claremont. The present owner is Charles H. Senff, Esq.

Bremo and Malvern Hill.

Bremo was patented by Colonel Richard Cocke in 1639, and continued the residence of the Cockes for nearly two hundred years. Near by, just back of Turkey Island, is another estate of the Cockes, called "Malvern Hill," after some hills in England of that name, which divide the counties of Hereford and Worcester. The old dwelling house at Malvern Hill is still standing, and is described as "one of the best specimens of colonial archi-

tecture." It was here that one of the most sanguinary conflicts of the war took place in 1862 between the armies of General George B. McClellan and General Joseph E. Johnston.

Turkey Island.

A short distance below Bremo is Turkey Island Plantation, so called because the first explorers up the river found in the neighborhood an island having many turkeys upon it. But the description seems more applicable to the Peninsula opposite, called Presque Isle, or Turkey Island Bend. In 1676, Turkey Island was owned, in part at least, by Colonel James Crews, one of Bacon's most loyal friends, who was hanged at the Glass-house near Jamestown by Sir William Berkeley. In 1684 his heirs—Sarah Whittington, wife of William Whittington, of London, Gent., and daughter of his brother Edward Crews, and Matthew Crews, "citizen and haberdasher of London," son of his brother Francis Crews—sold the land (six hundred acres) to William Randolph, "late of Warwickshire in England," a half-nephew of the poet Thomas Randolph and founder of the eminent Virginia family of Randolphs. William Randolph married Mary Isham, daughter of Henry Isham, of Bermuda Hundred, and granddaughter of William Isham, of Northamptonshire, in England. He had issue, nine children: (1) William, of Turkey Island; (2) Thomas, of Tuckahoe, in Goochland county; (3) Isham, of Dungeness, in Goochland; (4) Sir John, of Williamsburg, an eminent lawyer; (5) Colonel Richard, of Curls Neck; (6) Elizabeth, who married Richard Bland, of Jordan's; (7) Mary, who married John Stith, and was mother of William Stith, president of William and Mary College; (8) Edward, a sea captain; (9) Henry, who died, unmarried, in England. William Randolph was the common ancestor of Thomas Jefferson, John Marshall, Robert E. Lee and Edmund Randolph. The old dwelling-house at Turkey Island was destroyed by the gunboats of General McClellan, when he took refuge here with his army after "the Seven Days' Battles." At one time during the late war the estate was owned in part by General George E. Pickett.

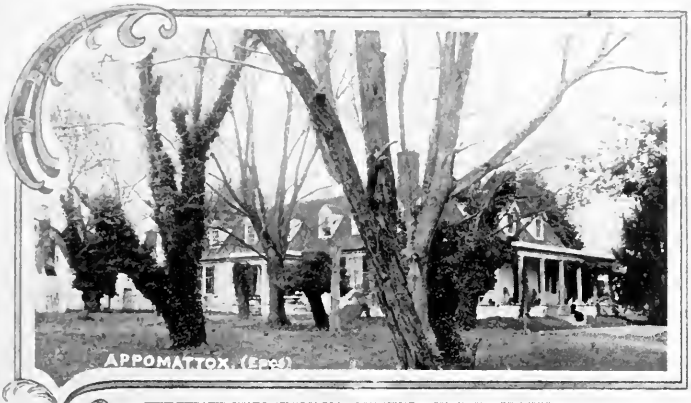
Shirley.

This place was first occupied in 1613, when Sir Thomas Dale establish Bermuda Hundred. It was called originally West and

Shirley Hundred. It was the property of Thomas West, Lord Delaware, and his brothers, Captain Francis West, Captain Nathaniel West, and Captain John West, who all resided in Virginia. Thomas West, Lord Delaware, married Cecilly, daughter of Sir Thomas Sherley. Early in the seventeenth century Shirley was patented by Colonel Edward Hill, Sr., a man of great prominence in the colony. It was inherited by his son Colonel Edward Hill, Jr. He left a son, Colonel Edward Hill, and two daughters —one, who married Edward Chilton, the Attorney-General, but died without issue, and Elizabeth who married John Carter, Secretary of State, and son of Robert (King) Carter. Colonel Edward Hill, third of the name, died in 1720 without children, and Shirley descended to his sister Elizabeth Carter, and has since remained in the Carter family. This was the birthplace of Anne Hill Carter, wife of "Light Horse" Harry Lee, and mother of General Robert E. Lee. The plantation is one of the finest in Virginia, and the buildings, which were erected about the beginning of the eighteenth century, are elegant examples of colonial architecture. Among the portraits at Shirley is an excellent one of Washington by Peale.

Cawsey's Care.

Nathaniel Causey was an old soldier who came in the first supply in January, 1608. He patented two hundred acres, called "Cawsey's Care," on Kimage's Creek December 10, 1620. John Causey sold this land in 1634 to Colonel Walter Aston, son of Walter Aston, of Longden, Stafford county, England. The latter patented, August 12, 1642, one thousand and forty acres on Kimage's Creek, of which Cawsey's Care was part. Colonel Aston left a son, Walter, who, on his death in 1666, devised the estate to Mr. George Harris, of Westover, merchant, who, dying, seised of the entire tract and leaving no children, Cawsey's Care fell to his brother, Thomas Harris, of London, merchant. This last sold to Colonel Thomas Grendon, Jr., of Cawsey's Care, who by his will, proved December 3, 1684, devised the same to William Byrd, Jr., son of William Byrd, whereupon it became absorbed in the Byrd estate. Sarah Grendon, the wife of Colonel Thomas Grendon, Sr., was one of the heroines of Bacon's Rebellion, being the only woman excepted from pardon in the acts of "indemnitee and free pardon," passed in 1676-'77.


APPOMATTOX. (Eppes)

MALVERN HILL. (Cocke)

SHIRLEY (Carter)

Berkeley.

On February 3, 1618-'19, the London Company granted to Sir William Throckmorton, Sir George Yeardley, Richard Berkeley, George Thorpe and John Smyth, of Nibley—all connected through the noble house of the Berkeleys—a plantation in Virginia, which became known as Berkeley Hundred. On the 4th of December, 1619, *The Margaret* arrived from Bristol at Jamestown, bringing thirty-five passengers, under the conduct of Captain John Woodliff. These were the first settlers of the "Town and Hundred of Berkeley," which was located between West and Shirley's Hundred and Westover. William Tracy, to whom Sir William Throckmorton assigned his interests, and George Thorpe came over in person and succeeded Captain Woodliff in the management of the settlement. In 1621, Rev. Robert Pawlett, a kinsman of Lord Pawlett, was preacher at Berkeley Hundred. But in the massacre of 1622 nine persons were killed there, and the plantation was temporarily abandoned. In 1636, the plantation was patented anew by Captain William Tucker, Maurice Thompson, George Thompson, William Harris, Thomas Deacon and Cornelius Loyd, of London, merchants, and Jeremiah Blackburn, of London, mariner, who had purchased it from the "adventurers of the company of Barkley Hundred." It was described as consisting of eight thousand acres, bounded east by the land (Westover) of Captain Thomas Pawlett (brother of Lord Pawlett), and on the west by King's Creek, and extending back into the woods. After some years their interests passed to John Bland, of London, merchant, whose only son, Giles, resided there till his execution in 1676 for complicity with Bacon. After this the estate went to Benjamin Harrison, the third of that name. He died April 10, 1730. He was father of Colonel Benjamin Harrison, a signer of the Declaration of Independence, and grandfather of President William Henry Harrison, who was born there.

Berkeley is better known to the Northern soldiers and people as Harrison's Landing, which was long the headquarters of General McClellan after his retreat from Malvern Hills. At that time there were no less than six hundred war vessels and transports anchored in the river near by, and the river shore for miles was covered with the camps of soldiers.

Westover.

At some time during the summer of 1619 Captain Francis West selected the site of Westover as the location for the lands of Henry West, fourth Lord Delaware, son and heir of his brother Thomas West, third Lord Delaware, Governor of Virginia. The three brothers of Thomas West, Lord Delaware (who all acted as Governors of Virginia), had separate plantations here—Captain Francis West, Captain John and Captain Nathaniel West. Only Captain John West is known to have left descendants in Virginia. His son, Colonel John West, of West Point, was the first child of English parents born on York River.

In 1622, six persons fell beneath the tomahawk at Westover. In February, 1632-'33, the representative for Westover and Flower de Hundred was Captain Thomas Pawlett. In January, 1637, Captain Pawlett patented two thousand acres of the plantation called Westover.

Pawlett was brother of the first Lord Pawlett, and was born about 1578, and came to Virginia in 1618. He appeared in the first American Assembly at Jamestown as a representative from "Argall's Gift."

Pawlett's grant describes the place as "two thousand acres in Charles City county, bounding to the river south, northward to the main, eastward to the land of Captain Perry, west upon Berkeley Hundred land, extending by the river side from Herring Creek to a gut dividing Westover from Berkeley.

Captain Thomas Pawlett died in 1643-'44, and his brother Lord John Pawlett, in 1665-'66, sold Westover to Theodorick Bland, of Berkeley, brother of John Bland, merchant, of London.

He died in 1674, when the Westover tract went to his sons, Theodorick and Richard Bland. In 1688, they conveyed twelve hundred acres of the original tract to William Byrd, Esq., son of John Byrd, goldsmith, of London, for three hundred pounds, and ten thousand pounds of tobacco.

Captain Byrd took part with Bacon during the civil war in 1676. He was living at that time near Richmond, and was Bacon's neighbor. At Westover, in 1690, he built a wooden residence, and died there in 1701.

He was succeeded by his son, Colonel William Byrd, who was by long odds the most accomplished man in America—statesman,

scholar and Fellow of the Royal Society. He built the present noble brick mansion at Westover, and gathered about him the finest library on the continent. He wrote several very entertaining tracts upon Virginia, which, during the time in which he flourished, have no equal in America in literary style and artistic excellence.

Buckland.

This settlement adjoined Westover and contained the plantation of Captain George Menifie, of the Council (who in 1635 took a prominent part in deposing Harvey), and of Captain William Perry (died August 6, 1637), who married Isabella, widow of Richard Pace, of Pace's Pains. Captain Henry Perry, son of Captain William Perry, married the daughter of Captain George Menifie, and became possessed of the whole of Buckland. Captain Perry left two daughters—Elizabeth, who married John Coggs, of Rainslipp, Middlesex county, England, and Mary, who married Thomas Mercer, a stationer of London.

In 1766, Buckland, containing ten thousand acres, was the property of Colonel William Cole.

This place is now owned by the Willcox family, of Charles City.

Swinyards.

This place probably gets its name from Thomas Swinhow, whose wife and sons, together with four other persons, were slain in the massacre in 1622. The name of the place appears variously as "Swiniares," "Swineherds," "Swinyards." It was owned in 1769 by Colonel William Cole, who also owned Buckland at that time.

Weyanoke.

This place was originally known as "Tanks Weyanoke" (Little Weyanoke), being nearly opposite to the Weyanoke town on the other side of the river. In 1619 the London Company granted twenty-two hundred acres to Sir George Yeardley, being "all that piece of marsh ground called Weynock, and also one other piece and parcell of land adjoining to the said marsh, called by the natives Kenwan, one parcel thereof abutteth upon a creek called Mapsock to the east, and the other parcell thereof towards a

creek, there called Queen's Creek, on the west, and extendeth in breadth to landward from the head of said creek called Mapsock up to the head of said creek called Queen's Creek (which creek, called Queen's Creek, is opposite to the point there which is now called Tobacco Point, and abutteth south upon the river and north to the landward)."

About 1626, Sir George Yeardley sold Weyanoke and Flower de Hundred to Captain Abraham Peirsey. In 1665 Joseph Harwood located a grant in Weyanoke, and the place descended for many years in the Harwood family. Major Samuel Harwood was a distinguished member of the convention of 1776. The land descended, in part at least, to his descendants, the Douthats, who still reside there.[1]

Southampton Hundred.

This land ran from "Tanks Weyanoke" to Chickahominy River, and contained about eighty thousand acres. It was located in 1617 by a powerful association of persons in England, of whom Sir Thomas Smith was at first the head. The Hundred was at first known as "Smith's Hundred," but when Sir Edwin Sandys became treasurer of the London Company in the place of Smith, Smith sold his shares, and the name in 1619 was changed to Southampton Hundred, in honor of the Earl of Southampton, who was a member. The organization was a strong one, owning ships, etc.

It was represented in the first General Assembly by Captain Thomas Graves and Mr. Walter Shelley.

Mrs. Mary Robinson gave two hundred pounds sterling by her will, proved in 1618, to founding a church, and in 1619 an unknown person gave a silver communion cup and other ornaments to "St. Mary's Church in Smyth's Hundred in Virginia." The cup is still preserved by the church at Hampton, and bears the

[1] The line seems to run thus: Joseph[1] Harwood, living in 1665, had issue Samuel[2] (who married Temperance Cocke, dau. of Capt. Thomas Cocke, Sr., of Henrico), who had issue Samuel[3], who married Agnes. Samuel's[3] will was proved in Charles City in 1745 by his widow Agnes. He had issue Samuel[4], member of the State Convention 1776, who married Margaret Woddrop, daughter of John Woddrop, of Nansemond, and had Agnes[5], who married Thomas Lewis, and Agnes[5], who married Fielding Lewis, son of Col. Warner Lewis, of "Warner Hall," and Eleanor Bowles. Fielding Lewis' daughter Eleanor married Robert Douthat, Esquire.

Hall-mark 1617, with the inscription above mentioned. This plate is by long odds *the oldest plate* in the United States. Very little is known of the associators in this Hundred after the year 1625. The land was divided up into parcels and granted to different persons.

Milton.

This place, it is believed, was named for Richard Milton, who patented lands in Charles City county as early as 1636.

Sherwood Forest.

This place reaches the river opposite to Brandon, and was the property in 1842 of Collier Minge, who sold the same to John Tyler, President of the United States. Its ancient name appears to have been "Walnut Grove." Three miles back, near Charles City, Court-house, is *Greenway*, the residence of Governor John Tyler, and birthplace of President Tyler.

Sturgeon Point.

This place appears to obtain its name from the sturgeons which were caught in great numbers in the river here.

Bachelor's Point.

Here resided the family of William Hunt, a sympathizer with Bacon, and who died in prison. His tombstone lies on the hill.

Sandy Point.

This place is nearly opposite to Claremont, and is one of the most fertile tracts of land on the north side of the river. Here at the time of the arrival of the colonists was seated the Indian town of "Paspahegh." About 1700 it became the plantation of Colonel Philip Lightfoot, of the Council of Virginia, descended from Rev. Richard Lightfoot, rector of Stoke-Bruern, in Northamptonshire, England. It remained many years in the Lightfoot family. The house is said to have been built in the year 1717, and is called "Tedington," the name of a place near London.

Chickahominy.

This is an Indian name, famed in the early history as the seat of a numerous tribe of Indians who preserved a *quasi-independence* of Powhatan. At the head of this river, perhaps in New Kent county, John Smith was captured in 1607. During the war

between the States its extensive swamps and morasses played an important part in determining military results.

Governor's Land.

In 1619, three thousand acres were laid out as the Governor's Land, extending from the Chickahominy to Jamestown, on the land "formerly conquered or purchased of the Paspahegh Indians." It was tilled at first by employees of the London Company for the support of the Governor's office. After the revocation of the charter in 1624, the land was leased on long terms of ninety-nine years to individuals, with a nominal rent. This system kept up till after the Revolution, when the Legislature, in May, 1784, vested "the lands near Jamestown, in the county of James City, and all the lots and houses in said city, which are the property of the commonwealth, and not yet granted" in the College of William and Mary.

Argall's Gift or Town.

This place was located in 1617 about a mile from Jamestown towards Chickahominy. Captain Argall contracted with some of the Martin's Hundred people to cut down the wood on three hundred acres for six hundred pounds, and Captain William Powell to clear the ground and put up houses for fifty pounds. In July, 1619, they were represented in the first House of Burgesses by Captain Thomas Pawlett and Mr. Gourgainey. But inasmuch as this tract was embraced in the district appointed by the company this year for the Governor's Land, the people petitioned the Assembly for relief from payment to Captain Argall. Their petition was granted, and the place appears to have been abandoned. It was doubtless in this clearing, called "Paspahegh old fields," that Bacon made his last halt preparatory to attacking Jamestown. "In the evening," says the *Narrative*, "Bacon, with his small tyred Body of men, his forlorne marching some distance before, comes into Paspahayes old fields, and advancing on horsebacke himself on the Sandy Beech before the Towne comands the trumpets to sound, Fires his Carbyne, dismounts, surveys the Ground, and orders a French worke to be cast up."

Jamestown.

Distant about sixty-eight miles from Richmond. Of this place I have already written at length.

Neck of Land.

This was the country between the Back River and Powhatan Creek, north of Jamestown Island. There were living there in 1624 sixteen persons, of whom Richard Kingsmill was the most prominent. It was represented in the General Assembly in 1629 by Richard Brewster, and in 1632 by Lieutenant Thomas Crumpe, who married Elizabeth, daughter of Rev. Richard Buck.

Archer's Hope.

This was a term to embrace an extensive country on both sides of Archer's Hope Creek. The country between the mouth of Back River and Archer's Hope Creek was divided into three parts —the Glebe Land, Archer's Hope proper, and Fowler's Neck. The Indians killed here, in 1622, at Ensign Spence's house, five persons, including William Fairfax, an ancient planter. In 1619, William Spence and John Fowler patented five hundred acres here, bounded on the west by the Glebe Land, and on the east by Fowler's Neck. This land was assigned by Thomas and Sarah Brice to Roger Webster, and it was confirmed in 1646, under the name of "Archer's Hope," by grant, to his three daughters, Lucy, Judith and Jane Webster.

The following order, entered by the general court of the colony, is preserved:

A Court at James Citty the 17th of September 1627 prsent Sir George Yeardley, knt, Governor, Dr. Pott, Capt. Smyth and Mr. Secretary:

Divers examinacons being taken and had concerning the unquiett life wch ye people of Archers Hope lead through the scoldinges raleings and fallings out wth Amy the wife of Christopher Hall and other abominable contencons happening between them to the dishonr of God and the breach of the Kings peace, the Court hath thereupon ordered that the said Amy shall be toughed round about the *Margarett and John* and ducked three times and further that Christopher Hall, John Upton, Robert Fitt and William Harrison and Amy the wife of the said Christopher Hall and Ann the wife of the said Robet Fitt shall be all bound unto their good behaviour and to appear at ye Quarter Court after Christmas.

Kingsmill.

This plantation gets its name from Richard Kingsmill, who had three hundred acres patented in Archer's Hope (on the east

side of the creek), in 1626. A patent in 1637 to Humphrey Higginson for "Tuttey's Neck," in James City county, describes it as separated from Kingsmill Neck by a branch of Archer's Hope Creek. Elizabeth Kingsmill, daughter of Richard Kingsmill, married, first, Colonel William Tayloe, and, secondly, Colonel Nathaniel Bacon, Sr., of the Council. The latter had no children, and left *Kingsmill* to his niece, Abigail Smith, who married Lewis Burwell. His son, Lewis Burwell, built an elegant brick mansion here, which was standing about 1800.

Littletown.

This adjoined Kingsmill, and in March, 1633, it was the residence of Captain George Menifie, of the Council, one of the greatest merchants in Virginia. He had a garden of two acres on the river side, and it was full of roses of Provence, apple, pear and cherry trees, the various fruits of Holland, with different kinds of sweet smelling herbs, such as rosemary, sage, marjoram and thyme. He had growing around the house plenty of peach trees, which astonished his visitors very much, for they were not to be seen on the coast anywhere else. Here the Governor sometimes held court. In 1661, Littletown was the residence of Col. Thomas Pettus, of the Council. He married the widow of Richard Durant, and his widow, Elizabeth, married Captain John Grove, who died in 1671. Captain Thomas Pettus, Jr.'s, widow, Mourning, married James Bray, Jr., and thus the place descended in the Bray family till 1752, when, on the death of Colonel Thomas Bray, Littletown descended to his daughter, Elizabeth, who married Colonel Philip Johnson. Elizabeth Johnson, daughter of James Bray Johnson, son of Colonel Philip Johnson, married Chancellor Samuel Tyler, who died in 1812.

Utopia Bottoms.

Adjoining Littletown are some deep ravines and bottoms, once owned by the poet George Sandys, called, in a patent granted to him, "Utopia," and still known as "Utopia Bottoms."

Wareham Ponds.

These ponds constituted the east boundary of Harrop Parish, and the west bounds of Martin's Hundred.

Martin's Hundred.

This was the plantation of the Society of Martin's Hundred, organized at the charge of certain lords, knights and gentlemen in England. They got a grant in 1618 from the parent company —the London Company—for eighty thousand acres, which they located in the east end of James City county on the east side of Skiffes (Keith's) Creek. It was named Martin's Hundred, in honor of Richard Martin, Esq., an attorney for the London Company, and a leading member of the society. In October, 1618, the Society of Martin's Hundred sent the *Gift of God* to Virginia with about two hundred and fifty settlers for the plantation, and they arrived in Virginia about January or March, 1619.

On July 31, 1619, Martin's Hundred was represented in the first Virginia Assembly by Mr. John Boys and John Jackson.

In the massacre of March 22, 1622, the colony here suffered severely. Seventy-eight persons were slain, and Martin's Hundred was temporarily abandoned; but in February, 1625, three years later, twenty-four persons were living there.

In January, 1625, there were about thirty-one persons resident there, of whom Mr. William Harwood was head. Martin's Hundred was represented in the Legislature, until counties were formed in 1634.

Till the Revolution, it constituted a distinct parish, and the foundations of the church may yet be seen on the roadside going into the Neck. In Martin's Hundred, Robert Carter had a plantation on James River, called "Carter's Grove," which became the residence of his grandson, Carter Burwell, whose house, a handsome brick structure, is still standing. It is now the property of Dr. E. G. Booth.

Skiffes or Keith's Creek.

This creek derives its name from Rev. George Keith, who was for a time a minister at Bermuda, but came to Virginia in 1617 in the ship *George*. He lived in the corporation of Elizabeth City in 1626, where he owned one hundred acres of land. In 1624, Mrs. Susan Keith was reported among the dead at Jamestown. She was probably his first wife. In 1634, he was "pastor of Kiskiacke," York county, at which time he obtained a grant of land on Cheesman's Creek, due partly for the adventure of his wife (second wife), Martha, and for his son, John. In 1625, he

was forty years old, and his son John eleven years old. George Keith may have been connected with the celebrated George Keith, who flourished at the close of the century. He was at first an eminent Quaker, but, renouncing that faith, was equally as eminent as a minister of the Established Church, and as an author. His daughter, Anne, married George Walker, of Hampton, Va., whom Keith visited in 1704. She was still living in 1728, when the Quaker preacher, Rev. Samuel Bownas, visited Hampton. Her daughter, Margaret, married Thomas Wythe, a magistrate of Elizabeth City county. Their son was the celebrated George Wythe, distinguished equally as a statesman, a jurist, and a professor of law in William and Mary College. He was taught Greek by his mother, Margaret (Walker) Wythe, and became an accomplished scholar. He was the first professor of law in the United States.

Mulberry Island.

Like Jamestown and Henrico, this, at the time the settlers came, was not an island, and is not an island now. It gains a place in our early history as being the point where, on June 8, 1610, Captain Edward Brewster, commanding the pinnace *Virginia,* met Sir Thomas Gates and the Jamestown colony on their way back to England, and gave the command from Lord Delaware for their return. In January, 1625, the place was occupied by thirty of Captain William Pierce's company.

There was a grant here, before 1626, for seventeen hundred acres to John Rolfe, who married Pocahontas. In 1635, Rev. Willis Heyley, "clarke and pastor of Mulberry Island," received a grant of two hundred and fifty acres, and the consideration was stated to be two-fold, viz., "his faithful pains in the Ministrie exemplified by a godly and quiet life, thereby seconding his doctrine, and next as a spur and encouragement for others of his calling to pursue so fair and bright an example." It seems that Robert Poole had three hundred acres in 1627 on Warwick River, adjoining Stanley Hundred above, and that below him, at the mouth of the Warwick River, was Lieutenant Gilbert Peppet, with two hundred and fifty acres of land.

The church of Mulberry Island was said to be west of Robert Poole's land.

By the side of the road going from Lee Hall into Mulberry Island is still pointed out the place where an old church once stood.

Stanley Hundred.

In 1626, Sir George Yeardley, the Governor, intimated his intention to the Council to take up one thousand acres, northerly upon Blunt Point River (Warwick River) and southerly upon the Main River, bounded easterly by a creek which separated him from the land of Robert Poole and Lieutenant Peppet. Governor Yeardley was buried at Jamestown November 13, 1627, and on February 9, 1627-'8, Lady Yeardley acknowledged a sale of the land under the name of "Stanley" to Lieutenant Thomas Flint, who accordingly patented it Sept. 20, 1628. It was described as adjoining the lands of John Rolfe, Esquire, and Captain William Pierce, in Mulberry Island. The place passed to John Brewer, who served as burgess for Warwick River and member of the Council. He returned to England, where he was "citizen and grocer of London." Brewer's will was proved in London, May 13, 1636, and in it he bequeathed Stanley Hundred to his son, John, who settled in Isle of Wight county, and has descendants on the south side. The widow of John Brewer, Sr., married Thomas Butler, "clark and pastor of Denbie."

Stanley is now the name of one of the magisterial districts of Warwick county, and includes Mulberry Island.

Denbeigh.

In 1626, Captain Samuel Mathews had lived in this neighborhood. In a patent to his grandson, John, it was described as consisting of twenty-nine hundred and forty-four acres, and as lying on the James River, between Deep Creek and Warwick River. His plantation was first known as "Mathews' Manour," and afterwards as "Denbeigh." Captain Mathews came to Virginia in 1622, and filled every office up to and including governor. A contemporary wrote in 1648 that he had a fine house, sowed much hemp and flax, and had it spun; kept weavers and a tannery, had forty negro slaves, whom he brought up to mechanical trades, and sowed large crops of wheat and barley. He also supplied vessels trading to Virginia with beef. He had plenty of cows, a fine dairy, and abundance of hogs and poultry, and is finally de-

scribed as one who "kept a good house, lived bravely, and was a true lover of Virginia." He married twice: (1) the daughter of Sir Thomas Hinton; (2) Frances, widow of Captain Nathaniel West, brother of Lord Delaware, and widow of Captain Abraham Peirsey, which last, at his death, left "the best estate that ever was known in Virginia."

Denbeigh, in 1678, was owned by John Mathews, "grandson of Samuel Mathews, Esquire." In 1629-'30, Denbeigh was represented in the House of Burgesses by Thomas Ceeley, Christopher Stoakes and Thomas Key. In 1632-'33, a public store-house was established at Denbeigh. Then, in 1680, a town was ordered to be built there, "at the mouth of Deep Creek, on Mr. Mathews' land," and to be called Warwick Town. In 1691, this order was renewed, and it was stated that a brick court-house and prison, together with several other houses, had been there built. The plantation of the Digges family, on Warwick River, was during the eighteenth century known as "Denbeigh," and a district of the county still goes by that name.

On the road passing from Warwick Court-house to Newport News is still standing an old wooden church known as "Denbeigh Church."

Nutmeg Quarter.

Below Blunt Point, in Warwick county, Sir Francis Wyatt had five hundred acres of land planted in 1626. This was called "Nutmeg Quarter." It seems he increased this dividend, for in July, 1635, Joseph Stratton patented five hundred acres, *part* of a dividend formerly belonging to Sir Francis Wyatt. It lay upon the river side, and had for bounds on the southeast a piece of land that "did once belong to Capt. John Smith," on the northwest land of John Laydon, whose marriage with Anne Burras was the first in Virginia. Nutmeg Quarter was represented in the House of Burgesses in October, 1629, by William Cole and William Bently, in February, 1629-'30, by Joseph Stratton, and in 1632-'33, by Francis Hough. After counties were formed, Nutmeg Quarter continued a separate parish till 1656, when on the petition of Captain Thomas Pritchard, in behalf of the majority of the inhabitants, it was united with Denbeigh Parish.

Waters' Creek.

The name of this creek is incorrectly given in the Coast Survey as Watts' Creek. It was named for Captain Edward Waters, who, in 1624, got a patent for one hundred acres on Waters' Creek, "two miles from Blunt Point." Captain Waters had an eventful life. He was born in 1584, and left England for Virginia in 1609, in the *Sea Venture,* which bore Sir Thomas Gates. The ship was wrecked on the Bermuda Islands, and Waters, with the rest, was compelled to remain forty-two weeks till they built two cedar ships, the *Deliverance* and the *Patience,* and by this means finally reached their destination in Virginia. Shortly afterwards Waters returned with Sir George Somers to the island for hogs, which abounded there in a wild state. Sir George Somers died, and his nephew, Matthew Somers, sailed with the ship to England, leaving Waters and two others to hold the island for the King of England. During his absence, Waters and his companions found a gigantic piece of ambergris weighing one hundred and sixty pounds, and worth one hundred and twenty thousand pounds sterling (about three million dollars in present money). The treasure was claimed by the London Company, and Waters only received a small share of its value. He remained in Bermuda nine or ten years, during which time he was a member of the Council. In 1618 or 1619, he moved to Virginia, and about 1620 married Grace O'Neil, whose second husband was Colonel Obedience Robins, of Northampton county. At the great massacre in 1622, himself and wife were taken prisoners by the Nansemond Indians, but, finding a small boat, they secretly escaped, and rowed over to Kecoughtan. In 1625, he was living, aged forty, on Waters' Creek, with his wife, aged twenty-one, and two children, William and Margaret, both born in Virginia. He was a captain, a burgess and a justice of Elizabeth City county, and was still living in March, 1629. His descendants are numerous and highly respectable.

Mary's Mount.

This place lay above Newport News. Upon February 1, 1630, Daniel Gookin, Jr., conveyed to Thomas Addison, late servant of Daniel, his father, one hundred and fifty acres of land above Newport News, at the place called "Mary's Mount."

Newport News.

This place appears on Smith's map as Point Hope. It seems to derive its present name from Port Newce, in Ireland. In November, 1620, the London Company made arrangements with Daniel Gookin (brother of Sir Vincent Gookin), of Port Newce, County Cork, Ireland, to transport from Ireland to Virginia cattle and emigrants. On November 22, 1621, he landed in Virginia, "wholly upon his own adventure," forty young cattle, well and safely, and fifty men, besides some thirty passengers." Captain Thomas Newce and his brother, Sir William Newce, had preceded him to Virginia from Port Newce, and the two settled near "New-Port-Newce," afterwards rendered "Newport News." Though coming from Ireland, all three were natives of England.

Daniel Gookin, Sr., returned to England, leaving behind at Newport News his son, Daniel Gookin, Jr. The latter was living here in 1633, when Peter De Vries, a Dutch ship captain, visited the place. De Vries wrote that "on the 20th of March, 1633, he anchored at evening before 'Newport-snuw,' where liveth a gentleman by the name of Goegen" (Gookin). He found there a fine spring, where all the ships stopped to take in water. Daniel Gookin, Jr., who was a Puritan in his sympathies, left Virginia in May, 1644, and became one of the most prominent men of Boston, Mass. His tombstone is at Cambridge with this inscription:

Here lyeth Interred
ye body of
MAJOR GENERAL DANIEL GOOKIN
Aged 75
who departed this life
ye 19th March 1686-7.

He and John Gookin, who was a prominent resident of Lower Norfolk county, Va., and undoubtedly a brother, conveyed Newport News, nominally containing twenty-five hundred acres, to John Chandler, who sold the same to Captain Benedict Stafford, from whom the land escheated to the crown. It was then patented anew by Colonel William Cole and Captain Roger Jones, which last assigned his interest to Cole, who, on April 20, 1685, obtained a patent for the same in his own name. Upon an exact

survey, it was found to contain only fourteen hundred and thirty-one acres, whereof twelve hundred and seventeen (twelve hundred and fifteen ?) lay in Warwick county, and two hundred and sixteen acres lay in Elizabeth City county. Susanna Cole, daughter of Colonel William Cole, married Colonel Dudley Digges, of York county, son of Governor Edward Digges, and grandson of Sir Dudley Digges, Master of the Rolls to King Charles I. In 1769, Newport News was owned by William Digges, a descendant, who held it for many years.

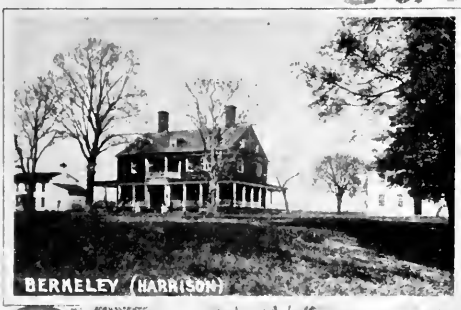
The wisdom of Daniel Gookin in selecting it, as the site of his proposed town, has been vindicated in our day by the phenomenal growth within a few years of a city of twenty-five thousand inhabitants.

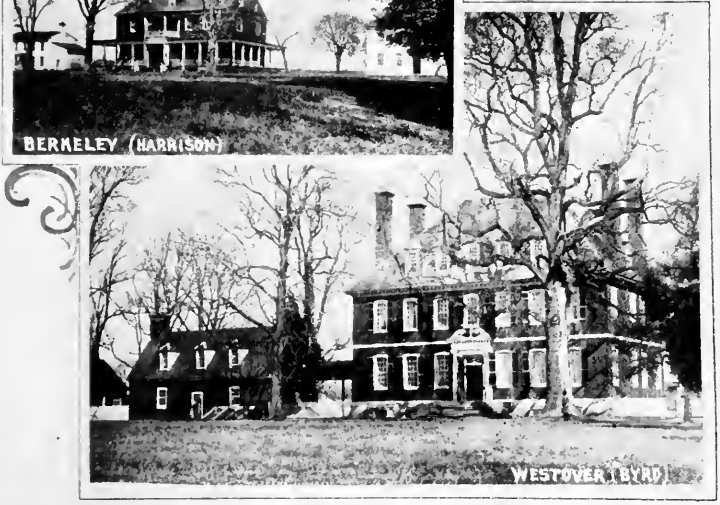
Off Newport News occurred, on the 8th of March, 1862, the battle between the Federal fleet, supported by the batteries at Newport News, and the Confederate iron-clad, *Virginia*, or *Merrimac*. Although the latter was many times outnumbered in men and guns, she, for the first time in the history of the world, demonstrated the superiority of an iron-clad vessel in a contest with wooden ones, no matter how formidable and well equipped. On the next day she encountered the *Monitor*—a vessel much more heavily armored than the *Merrimac*, and scarcely presenting any surface above water. Nevertheless, it is the official statement of the captain of the Federal frigate, *Minnesota*, that the *Monitor* first retired from the scene of battle towards Old Point. Twice afterwards the *Merrimac* returned to the Roads, on the 11th of April, 1862, and May 8, 1862; but in each case the *Monitor*, though supported by the *Stevens Battery*, the *Naugatuck*, and other iron ships, declined to engage the redoubtable vessel. Till May 10, 1862, the *Merrimac* protected both the entrance to the Elizabeth River and to the James, and thus securing the right wing of General Joseph E. Johnston's army on the Peninsula, she was destroyed by the Confederates on May 11th, after Johnston's left wing on the York River had been turned, and he was forced to retire up the Peninsula.

Kecoughtan, or Hampton.

This name applied to an Indian district as well as an Indian town. Because the Kecoughtan Indians killed Humphrey Blunt

WEYANOKE (HARWOOD)
SHERWOOD (TYLER)


BERKELEY (HARRISON)


WESTOVER (BYRD)

at Blunt Point, Sir Thomas Gates, on July 9, 1610, drove the werowance, Pochins, and his tribe away, and built two forts at the mouth of the river of Kecoughtan—Fort Henry and Fort Charles, named in honor of the sons of King James I. In 1619, on the petition to the House of Burgesses of the inhabitants, who did not like the heathen name of Kecoughtan, the name Elizabeth City (from Elizabeth, King James' daughter) was given to one of the four great corporations, in which all the settlements were included. The capital city, Elizabeth City, was to be on Southampton River, so named in 1610 in honor of Henry Wriothesley, Earl of Southampton, the patron of Shakespeare, and the honor of his age. Afterwards Elizabeth City was the name given, in 1634, to the present county.

The name Kecoughtan, however, adhered to the country around Southampton River during the whole of the seventeenth century. The town of Hampton (from Southampton) was not regularly established till 1680, when it was laid out on the west side of the Hampton River, on the land of Captain Thomas Jarvis, a ship captain, who married Elizabeth, the widow of Nathaniel Bacon, Jr., and daughter of Sir Edward Duke.

The first church at Elizabeth City appears to have been on the east of Hampton River. There was a creek called Church Creek, and in 1637 Robert Partin leased "40 acres south on the Fort Field, and north towards the church." The first minister was Rev. William Mease, who came with Gates in 1610, and lived ten years in Virginia. Another early minister was Rev. Jonas Stockden, who came to Virginia in 1620. He was the son of Rev. William Stockden, or Stockton, of Barkewell, County Warwick, England, and the author of a letter, several times printed, which forewarned the colonists of the massacre of 1622, and announced the belief of the futility of any attempt to civilize or convert the Indians, until their head men were put to death. He appears to have been the earliest exponent of the idea that "the only good Indian is a dead Indian." In September, 1627, he leased fifty acres of the company's land near the "Indian House Thicket." The company's land—three thousand acres—was on the easterly side of Southampton River, and there, too, was the glebe land, of one hundred acres, and the common land, of fifteen hundred acres. Major Thomas Tabb's house and lot are now on the old

glebe land. In 1644, Rev. William Wilkinson had land near the Strawberry Banks and Buck Roe.[1]

The lands from the mouth of Hampton River, stretching along Mill Creek, were the public lands already referred to. Here, commanding the month of Hampton River in 1610, were Fort Henry and Fort Charles, "a musket shot apart." The field to the east of Fort Henry was known as the Fort Field, then succeeded the Strawberry Banks, on Mill Creek, and beyond them, towards the Bay, Buck Roe. In Buck Roe were seated in 1621 the French Vignerons sent over to instruct the people how to raise grapes to better advantage, and how to make wine. These men had been selected by John Bonall, silkworm-raiser to the King at Oakland, England, and had been sent over by him, under the charge of his kinsman, Anthony Bonall.

About the year 1667, the church at Pembroke Farm was built on the west of Hampton. In that year a burial took place in the "Old Church" of Kecoughtan, and one at the "New Church" of Kecoughtan.

About 1704, the new church was so out of repair that services were held in the court-house. On July 1, 1715, permission was granted by Alexander Spotswood, the Governor, for the justices to remove from their old court-house and build a new one in Hampton Town, and land was purchased from Captain William Boswell for this purpose in 1716.

When John Fontaine visited Hampton, in 1716, it was a place of one hundred houses, but "it had no church." It was the place of greatest trade in Virginia, and "all the men of war commonly lay before this arm of the river." The inhabitants drove a great trade with New York and Pennsylvania, and lived in great com-

[1] The ministers in Elizabeth City appear to have been: Rev. William Mease, 1610-1620; Francis Bolton, 1621; Jonas Stockden, 1627; William Wilkinson, 1644; Philip Mallory, 1664; Justinian Aylmer, 1665-1667; Jeremiah Taylor, 1667-1677; John Page, 1677-1687; Cope Doyley, 1687-1691; James Wallace, 1691-1712; Andrew Thompson, 1712-1719; James Falconer, 1724; William Fife, 1731; Thomas Warrington, 1756-1770; William Selden, 1770; John Spooner (died 1779, age 42); William Nixon, 1783; Henry Skyren (born in Whitehaven, England, and died in Hampton, Va., 1795); Benjamin Brown, died January 17, 1806, aged 39; George Halson, 1806; Mark L. Cheevers, 1836; Mr. Bausman, 1845; J. C. McCabe, 1850.

fort and affluence. In 1727, the people of Elizabeth City county quarreled as to the site of the new church. The Governor and Council, to whom the matter was referred, decided in favor of Hampton. On June 17, 1727, Mr. Jacob Walker and Mr. John Lowry were appointed by the court of Elizabeth City to lay off and value an acre and a half of ground on Queen's Street, joining upon Mr. Boswell's lots, for building the church thereon. The same day, Mr. Henry Cary, by order of the minister, church wardens and the court, was permitted to take wood, "at the rate of six pence per load to burn bricks for the church, from the School land."[1] In 1760, Alexander Kennedy devised land to the poor of Elizabeth City county, and the sum of "40 pds sterling towards purchasing out of England a bell for the church of Elizabeth City Parish, provided the vestry and church wardens will undertake a belfry within 12 months after my decease."

"Little England," a place between Hampton and the mouth of Hampton River, was anciently known as Capps' Point, and was doubtless the residence of William Capps, a prominent settler in 1627.

At Hampton, on February 27, 1634, stopped Leonard Calvert, with his emigrants, on his way to found the great State of Maryland.

In the waters near by occurred, on the 29th of April, 1700, the obstinate fight of the fifth-class English man-of-war *Shoreham* with a pirate ship, in which, however, the pirate was beaten. Among the casualties was the death of Peter Heyman, a collector, of the customs for the James River, and grandson of Sir Peter Heyman, of Summerfield, County Kent, England. He was shot down by the side of Sir Francis Nicholson, the Governor, who was himself on board the *Shoreham* and participated in the affray.

Hither also came the gallant Captain Henry Maynard, after his victory, November 21, 1718, over the pirate Blackbeard, or Teach, in Pamlico Sound, North Carolina, swinging the pirate's head from his bowsprit and bearing captive the survivors of the

[1] Four years before John Harvard left his famous benefaction for the establishment of Harvard College, Benjamin Symes, of Elizabeth City, left cattle and 200 acres for a free school in Elizabeth City, the first in America.

pirate's crew, most of whom were afterwards hung at Williamsburg.

Hampton was captured during the war of 1812 by the British under Admiral Cockburn, and subjected to pillage and outrage. During the war between the States, the inhabitants set fire to their own dwellings, rather than they should afford a shelter to the enemy. It has been called the "Game-cock Town," and has produced a number of prominent and distinguished men. Of these George Wythe, Commodore James Barron, and Commodore Lewis Warrington are perhaps the most distinguished.

Point Comfort.

After Captain Smith's departure for England, in October, 1609, President George Percy sent Captain John Ratcliffe down to the mouth of the river to erect a fort as a precaution against an attack of the Spaniards, who claimed the continent. He chose for the fort the present site of Fort Monroe, and named it "Algernoune Fort," in honor of President Percy's ancestor, William Algernoun de Percy, who came to England with William the Conqueror.

After Ratcliffe, Captain James Davis had command for several years.

The fort contained seven pieces of artillery; two of thirty-five "quintals," and the others thirty, twenty and eighteen—all of iron.

After Percy's departure for England, in April, 1612, the name Algernourn Fort was discontinued; and the place, for many years afterwards, was referred to as "Point Comfort Fort." It stood two-thirds of a league from Fort Charles and Fort Henry, on Hampton River.

In 1630, the fort having fallen into disuse, it was rebuilt by Captain Samuel Mathews, afterwards Governor.

Captain Francis Pott, brother of Governor Pott, of the ancient family of the Potts of Harup, in Yorkshire, was made commander, and continued such till he was removed by Sir John Harvey in 1635.

In that year (1635) Francis Hooke, of the Royal Navy, "an old servant of King Charles," was put in command.

He died in 1637, and Captain Christopher Wormeley, who had been Governor of Tortugas was for a short time in charge.

Then, in 1639, succeeded Richard Moryson, son of Sir Richard Moryson, and brother-in-law of the noble Cavalier, Lucius Cary, Lord Falkland.

In 1641, he returned to England, and left his brother, Lieutenant Robert Moryson, in charge of the fort.

In 1649, Major Francis Moryson, another brother, who had served King Charles in the wars with the Parliament, came to Virginia with Colonel Henry Norwood, Colonel Mainwaring Hammond, and other cavaliers. He was appointed by Sir William Berkeley captain of the fort. After Major Moryson, his nephew, Colonel Charles Moryson, about 1664, succeeded to the command of the fort.

In October, 1665, the fort at Point Comfort needing repairs, the General Assembly appointed Captain William Bassett to build a new fort, which the Governor determined should be at Jamestown, but the King vetoed the act and directed the rebuilding of the fort at Point Comfort.

Not long after this, a fleet of Dutch men-of-war invaded Hampton Roads, and burnt the English shipping there. Then the Assembly took action, but instead of doing what the King required them to do, they ordered forts to be built at five places, viz.: Nansemond, Jamestown, Tindall's Point, Corotoman and Yeocomico.

The neglected condition of the fort in 1673 enabled the Dutch men-of-war to repeat their performance of 1667. They invaded the river, and burned the shipping.

However, some sort of a fort was kept at Point Comfort for many years after, till, in 1727, the resolve was taken to rebuild and repair the battery there.

The new fort was called Fort George, in honor of the reigning king. James Baron was captain before the Revolution. Part of its lines were still visible in 1847. The walls were of brick, made on the spot which were nine inches long, four wide and three thick. The exterior wall was sixteen feet distant from the interior one, and the former was twenty-seven inches thick, and the latter sixteen inches thick. These walls were connected with counter walls ten or twelve feet apart, forming cribs which were no doubt filled up with sand.

The present Fort Monroe was commenced in 1819.

Cape Charles.

This is the extreme point of the Accomac Peninsula, and was named for Prince Charles by the first settlers. In 1614, Sir Thomas Dale established a settlement of men under Lieutenant Craddock at Smith's Island, near the cape, for the purpose of making salt out of sea-water. He called this settlement "Dale's Gift."

AUTHORITIES.

Abstracts of the Proceedings of the Virginia Company of London, 2 vols. Virginia Historical Society Publications.

Beverley, Robert—History of Virginia.

Bristol Parish, Prince George County. By Rev. Philip Slaughter, D. D.

Brown, Alexander—"Genesis of the United States," 2 vols. Boston. 1891.

"First Republic in America." Boston, 1898.

Bruce, Philip Alexander—"Economic History of Virginia in the Seventeenth Century," 2 vols. 1896.

Campbell, Charles—History of Virginia. Philadelphia. 1860.

"Chappell, Dickie and Other Kindred Families of Virginia." 1900.

Charles City County, Va., Records.

Clayton, Rev. John—Force's Collection of Historical Documents, Vol. III.

Colonial State Papers. Public Record Office. London.

Colonial Records of Virginia. Senate Document. 1874.

De Vries' "Voyages From Holland to America." New York. 1853.

Dictionary of National Biography. London.

Elizabeth City County Record Books.

Fiske, John—"Old Virginia and Her Neighbors," 2 vols. Boston.

Force, Peter—Collection of Historical Documents Relating to Colonies in North America, 4 vols.

General Court of Virginia MSS. Records of 1670–'76: Virginia Historical Society MSS. Collections.

Hamor, Ralph—"True Discourse."

Harleian Society, Publications of the

Hening, William Waller—Virginia Statutes at Large. Richmond. 1812.

Henrico County, Va., Records.

Hotten, J. C.—Original Lists of Emigrants to America. New York.

Howe's Historical Collections of Virginia. 1847.

Isle of Wight County, Va., Records.

Jamestown, Report of the Proceedings of the Late Jubilee at Jamestown. Petersburg. 1807.

Jamestown: Notes on a Journey to. W. G. Stanard.

James River: Afloat on the James.

Lossing's "Field Book of the American Revolution."

Ludwell MSS., Virginia Historical Society Collections.

McDonald Papers. Copies of State Papers in Public Record office. London.

Memoirs of a Huguenot Family. New York. 1853.

Meade's Old Churches, Etc.

Neill, Rev. E. D.—History of the Virginia Company of London (1606–1624). Albany, N. Y. 1869.

Virginia Carolorum (1625-'85).

Virginia Vetusta.

Virginia and Virginiola.

Virginia Colonial Clergy.

New England Historical and Genealogical Register.

Norfolk, Lower (Va.), County Records.

Norfolk, Lower, Antiquary. By Edward W. James.

Oxford Matriculations. By Foster.

Percy, George—Discourse in Arber's *Smith*.

Present State of Virginia. By Hugh Jones. 1724.

Richmond Dispatch, May 15, 1857.

Prince George County (Va.) Records.

Randolph MSS. 3 vols. Virginia Historical Society.

Robinson, Conway—Transcripts of Miscellaneous Records. Records of General Court of Virginia.

Sainsbury, E. Noel—Abstracts. Records in British Public Record Office MSS.

Smith, Works of Capt. John. Edited by Prof. Edward Arber.

Southern Literary Messenger.

Spelman, Henry—Relation of Virginia in Arber's *Smith*.

Spotswood, Gov. Alexander, Official Letters of.

Strachey, William—History of Travaile in Virginia Brittania. Hackluyt Society. 1849.

Surry County, Va., Records.

Traylor, Robert Lee—"Some Notes on the First Recorded Visit of White Men to the Site of the Present City of Richmond, Va., May 23-'4, 1607." Richmond. 1899.

Virginia Historical Collections, Vol. XI.

Virginia Historical Register. 6 vols. Richmond.

Virginia: A History of the Executives. Margaret Vowel Smith.

Virginia Magazine of History and Biography. Richmond, Va.

Virginia Land Patents (1621-1750). Office of Register of Land Office.

William and Mary College Quarterly. Williamsburg and Richmond, Va.

Winsor's Narrative and Critical History of the United States.

York County, Va., Records.

APPENDIX.

APPENDIX.

SOME NOTES.

Page 19.—Mr. J. R. Bacon's statement June 2, 1900:

"My father, William E. Bacon, was employed by Colonel Goodrich Durfey as carpenter. I lived with him on Jamestown Island, and, though but a small boy at the time, retain lively recollections of the appearance of the place. I remember that I used to sit on the roots of the cypress tree, now standing many yards in the water, and fish at high tide. At low tide its roots were dry. I remember that the boiler of the steamer *Curtisspeck*, blew up at the wharf while I lived there. The mail was carried to the island over the causeway across the submerged neck. The pierhead of the wharf stood then about sixty feet from the shore. I was born in 1835, and was about ten years old when we removed."

Page 72.—Mr. John Gilliam's father was a carpenter employed by Colonel Durfey [who owned the island from 1836 to 1846]. The Gilliams lived in the brick magazine not, as stated, during Mr. Coke's proprietorship, but during Colonel Durfey's. Mr. Gilliam visited the island with the editor about two years ago, and pointed out the cypress, now two hundred and ninety feet distant, which, in 1836-'46, stood on the shore about a hundred yards from the magazine. Mr. Gilliam died in 1899, aged about seventy years.

Page 78.—The church mentioned in the grants to Mr. Hampton in 1639 and 1644, was not the brick church then incomplete, but the old wooden church. The brick church was not finished till after November, 1647 (see page 77). Then there is no ridge behind the present tower, distant one hundred and twenty-six and one-half yards from the river front. The site of the early churches is now clearly under water. No doubt a system of dredging in the water at the upper end of the island would disclose tombstones, and fix the location of the early church-yard. It is hoped that this work will be undertaken some day, since the sand undoubtedly holds many interesting relics of Virginia's past.

Pages 115, 116.—The correct date of the grant to William Sherwood, referred to on pages 115 and 116, is April 20, 1694. His grant was for three hundred and eight acres, "situate in James City and James City Island, beginning on James River at the head of a branch of Pitch and Tar Swamp, next above the State House." It first followed the north side of the swamp till it reached a ditch dividing Sherwood's land from

that formerly belonging to Thomas Woodhouse. At this point, it crossed the swamp south ten degrees westerly to the three and one-half acres lot purchased by Sherwood of John Page, Esq., and along the same the said course, in all twenty-three chains, to a mulberry tree near the land of John Fitchett. It then took an easterly course, running about seven and four-tenths chains (thirty-one feet to a chain) to an acre of land Sherwood purchased of David Newell, brother of Jonathan Newell, deceased; thence three chains toward Henry Hartwell's house. From this point, the line travelled easterly near Pitch and Tar Swamp till it met Edward Travis's land. Thence by devious courses it crossed to the Back River Marsh; then forty chains through the marsh north thirty-three and three-quarters degrees easterly to the Back River, and "up the same to Sandy Bay to a persimmon tree under Blockhouse Hill; thence under the said hill west six chains to James River, and down it to the first-mentioned branch."

SOME ERRORS.

Page 39, *line first*.—"The western side of the lot next to him was Mr. George Menefie," etc., should read "*On* the western side," etc.

Page 78.—Third line from bottom, the true date of the order of the vestry of Bruton Church is June 5, 1679 (not 1678). (See *The Church Review*, April, 1855, p. 139.)

Chart of James River, opposite page 120, "Wakefield" should appear near Claremont, and not, as it does, near College Creek.

Page 131.—Fifteenth line from the bottom, "Dale" should read *Gates*.

Page 139.—Third line from top, "General Joseph E. Johnston" should read *General Robert E. Lee*.

Page 150.—Martin's Hundred is located on the *west side* of Skiffe's Creek, not, as printed, on the "east."

SUBJECT INDEX.

Ambergris found on Bermuda Island, 154.

Anecdotes: Sir Henry Wyatt and the cat, 88; Rev. James Madison and Republican principles, 98; Rev. William Preston and the college authorities, 97; Mrs. Ciceley Jordan's flirtation, 129.

Bacon's Rebellion: Beginning of, 51; Bacon's camp at Jordan's Point, 130; Bacon's marches against the Indians near the North Carolina line, 52, 130; proclaimed a rebel, 112; elected to the General Assembly on his return, 112; confers secretly with Drummond and Lawrence in Jamestown, 53; promised a commission, 113; flees from Jamestown and returns at the head of an armed force, 113; gets his commission and marches out of Jamestown, 113; once more proclaimed a rebel by Berkeley, 113; Bacon marches to Middle Plantation, and Berkeley sails to Accomac, 114; Bacon routs the Pamunkeys, and finds on his return the governor at Jamestown, 114; speech of Bacon to his men in Greenspring Old Fields, 114; besieges Jamestown, 104, 114; Governor Berkeley deserts the town, which is burnt by Bacon, 64, 104, 114; death of Bacon, 64, 105; fate of Bacon's friends: James Crews, William Cookson, John Derby (Digby?), 105; William Drummond, 123; Richard Lawrence, Thomas Whaley, John Forth, 109; Giles Bland, 142; William Hunt, 146; Mr. Allen's house in Surry fortified during the Rebellion and called "Bacon's Castle," 122; Bacon's widow, Elizabeth Duke, marries Capt. Thomas Jarvis, of Hampton, 158; Bacon's plantation at Curls Neck confiscated, 138; Lawrence's lot in Jamestown confiscated, 53; heroines of Bacon's Rebellion: Sarah Drummond, 53; Sarah Grenden, 140; commission sent out of England to inquire into the causes of Bacon's Rebellion, 123; regiment sent from England to subdue Bacon, 42.

Back Street, distant from the road along the southeast bank of the island, one hundred and forty-three yards, at other points further west twenty-two poles and nineteen poles (see p. 39); distant from Back River, seventy poles, or three hundred and eighty-five yards (see pp. 39, 116). These distances prove that the street ran along the ridge of land, first met with at the west end of the island. Compare pages 19, 59. (On the Back Street were probably also the second and third State Houses, 19, 59, 116.)

Block-houses, 12, 26, 29, 31, 99, 102, 103.

Brick-kiln, 46, 99.

Brick and brick-makers, 29, 46, 49, 60, 136, 160.

Burgesses of Jamestown, 64, 65.

Churches at Jamestown (Wooden), 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 69, 73-77, 110, 169; where located, 78, 110 (Mr. Hampton had lots behind the church, *i. e.*, the wooden church in the fort, 78); brick, 18, 44, 45, 51, 52, 59, 60, 77-79, 169; brick at Middle Plantation, 67, 88; at Elizabeth City, 158-161; brick at Merchant's Hope, 129.

Confederate Signal Station, 136.

Cross at Cape Henry, 23, 120.

Dead at Jamestown: Rev. Robert Hunt, Sir George Yeardley, Opechancanough, 39, 46, 63, 64, 73.

Emigrants to Virginia, 23, 24, 25, 26, 33, 41, 47, 66-69, 133.

Forts at *Jamestown*, triangular palisaded fort, 25, 26, 28, 31, 69, 70, 78; where located, 78; turf fort of a tetragon shape, 54, 55, 70; brick fort, 17, 54, 55, 58, 70-73, 74; at *Henrico*, Charity Fort, Mount Malado, Fort Elizabeth, Fort Patience, 136; at *Elizabeth City*, Fort Charles, 12, 158, 159, 161; Fort Henry, 12, 158, 159, 161; at *Point Comfort*, Algernon Fort, Fort Point Comfort, Fort George, Fort Monroe, 161, 162.

First (at Jamestown) permanent English settlement in America at, trial by

First English settlement—
jury, 21; marriage, 21, 73; birth of an English child in Virginia, 21, 74; legislative assembly in America, 21, 75; fort, 25, 69; houses, 25; wooden church, 25, 73; brick church, 44; minister (Robert Hunt), 25, 73, 74, 87; wheat, 25; supply, 25; fire, 25; well of water, 26; block-house, 99; American glass factory, 102, 111; Governor of Virginia (Sir Thomas Gates), 26; Governor's house, 106; tobacco raiser (John Rolfe), 63, 76; African slaves in the United States, 32, 77; consideration of a college and free school, 32; assertion of principle, "No taxation without representation," 48; open resistance to governmental tyranny, 42; two burgesses, 64; State House, 110; birth of an idiot child, 88; celebration in 1807, 57; first picture of tower of Jamestown church, 79; (at Littletown) peach trees in America, 149; (at Elizabeth City) free school in America, 160; (at Falling Creek) iron works in America, 133; (at Dale's Gift) salt works in America, 162; (at Kiskiack) child born on York River of English parents (John West), 143; (at Williamsburg) capitol, so-called, 116, 143; (at Newport News) demonstration by the *Merrimac* of the superiority of iron-clad vessels in naval warfare, 156.
French vine-dressers, 159.
Gardens, 44, 45; Mrs. Pierce's, at Jamestown, 41; George Menifie's, at Littletown, 149.
Glass-house, 11, 139, 102-105.
Governor's house, 31, 106-109.
Governor's Land, 18, 106, 147.
Greenspring, 108-110, 114; oranges gathered there, 108; "Old Fields" at, where Bacon made a speech to his soldiers, 114.
Harvey, Sir John, deposition of, 42-44.
Historical summary, 62-64.
Houses at Jamestown: Captain William Pierce's, "the fairest in Virginia" (1623), p. 40; Richard Kempe's brick house, "the fairest that ever was known in this country for substance and importance" (1639), p. 44; Governor Berkeley's three brick houses, 46; Richard Lawrence's brick house, 51; William Drummond's, 51; Auditor Nathaniel Bacon, Sr's, two houses, 52; William Sherwood's "faire house," 54; Col. Thomas Swann's, 52; Major Theophilus Hone's, 52; Col. Travis, 57, 59; Col. Ambler's, 57, 59.
Houses at Jamestown—
Indians: Names of tribes along James River, 9-14; respective territories and chiefs, 9-13; Powhatan, head war-chief, 9, 13; his system of finance, 13; songs of the Indians, 14; attack the settlers, 25, 69; kill cattle, 29; peace with after marriage of Pocahontas, 108; massacre of 1622, 124, 128, 129, 132, 142, 143, 144, 150, 154; converted Indian, Chanco, saves the colony, 124; second massacre in 1644, 46, 90; outbreak in 1676, 51, 112, 113.
Iron works at Falling Creek, 133.
Isthmus of Jamestown, 16-20.
Italian glass-workers, 103.
James River: Places on, origin of; Cape Henry, Lynnhaven Bay, Willoughby Land Spit, Sewell's Point, Elizabeth River, 120; Craney Island, Nansemond River, Naseway Shoals, Pagan River, Day's Point, Basse's Choice, Bennett's Plantation, or Warascoyack, 121; Burwell's Bay, Lawne's Plantation, Hog Island, Lower Chippokes Creek, College Creek, Cobham, 122; Gray's Creek, Swann's Point, Four Mile Tree, 123; Pace's Pains, Sunken Marsh Creek, Upper Chippokes Creek, Brandon, 124; Ward's Creek, Windmill Point, Flower de Hundred, 127; Maycock's, Powell Creek, 128; Chappell's Creek, Bicker's Creek, Chaplin's Choice, Jordan's Jorney, or Beggar's Bush, 129; Bailey's Creek, City Point, 130; Appomattox River, Bermuda Hundred, 131; Neck of Land, or Rochedale Hundred, Gatesville, Sheffield's Plantation, 132; Drewry's Bluff, Falling Creek, Ampthill, Warwick, 133; Goode's Creek, The Falls, or Powhatan, 134; Allmond's Creek, Tree Hill, Chatsworth, Wilton, 135; Chaffin's Bluff, Farrar's Island and Dutch Gap, 136; Varina, or Aiken's Landing, 137; Four Mile Creek, Curls Neck, Bremo and Malvern Hill, 138; Turkey Island, Shirley, 139; Cawsey's Care, 140; Berkeley, 142; Westover, 143; Buckland, Swinyards, Weyanoke, 144; Southampton Hundred, 145; Milton, Sherwood Forest, Sturgeon Point, Bachelor's Point, Sandy Point, Chickahominy River, 146; Governor's Land, Argall's Gift, or Town, Jamestown, 147; Neck of Land, Archer's Hope, Kingsmill, 148; Littletown, Utopia

James river—
Bottoms, Wareham Ponds, 149; Martin's Hundred, Skiffe's or Keith's Creek, 150; Mulberry Island, 151; Stanley Hundred, Denbeigh, 152; Nutmeg Quarter, 153; Waters' Creek, Mary's Mount, 154; Newport News, 155; Kecoughtan, or Hampton, 156; Point Comfort, 161; Dale's Gift, 162.
Jamestown, topography of the Island of, 15-20; country surrounding, 20; the English at, 21-64; burgesses and members of conventions from, 64, 65; forts at, 25, 28, 31, 55, 58, 69-73; churches at, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 40, 45, 49, 51, 52, 59, 60, 80; service of the church at, 80-82, 97; tombstones on Island of, 59, 80, 82-87; ministers of, 25, 28, 30, 73, 74, 75, 77, 78, 87-99; block-houses at, 12, 26, 29, 31, 99-102; glass-houses at, 11, 102-105; Governor's house at, 31, 106-109; State Houses at, 44, 45, 51, 52, 56, 59, 64, 110-117; gardens at, 39, 41; brick-kiln at, 46, 99; brick-makers at, 29, 46, 49, 60, 99; magazine at, 19, 60, 71, 72; fires at, 25, 52, 56, 60; houses at, 25, 26, 28, 29, 31, 35 39, 40, 44, 45, 46, 47, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53, 56, 57, 60, 64; marriage at, 73, 75, 87; wells at, 26, 29, 51, 61; Robert Hunt, Sir George Yeardley and Opechancanough buried at, 39, 46, 63, 64, 73; corporation and parish of, 31; causeway to, 16, 18; bridges at, 17, 18, 29, 38, 39; wharf at, 17, 20, 29, 169; tobacco cultivation at, 30, 44; mortality at, 25, 26, 33, 59; plants at, 41, 59; African slaves sold at, 33; first General Assembly at, 32, 76, 77; population of, 24, 35; park at, 106; New Town at, 38-40; lots in, 38-41, 44-46, 47, 52-54, 55; highway at, 38, 40; silk-worms raised at, 40; ships not to break bulk till they arrive at, 44, 50; linen factory at, 46; ordinary keepers at, 47, 51, 52; cavaliers at, 47, 48, 49; no town government at, 50; descriptions of, 51, 55, 56, 58, 59, 60, 61; proprietors of, 56, 59, 60, 61; country house at, 53; surrendered to Parliament, 47; Charles II. proclaimed at, 48, 91; Back Street of, 19, 39, 40, 59, 116; fired by Nathaniel Bacon, Jr., 52, 114; convention of clergy at, 79; the fire-flies at, 94; sycamore tree at, 80; graveyards at, 59, 79, 80; tower of church at, 60, 61, 79, 81.
Libraries, 68; Col. William Byrd's, 144.
Magazine, 19, 60, 71, 72, 169.
Marriages: John Laydon and Ann Burras, 73, 87; John Rolfe and Pocahontas, 75, 87.
Massacres (1622), 34, 35, 124, 128, 129, 132, 143, 144, 148, 150, 154; (1644) 46, 90.
Merrimac and *Monitor*, 156.
Ministers, at Jamestown, 25, 28, 30, 73, 74, 75, 77, 78, 87-99; at Henrico, 136; at Varina, 137; at Berkeley, 142; at Elizabeth City, 158, 159; at Chiskiack, 150; at Mulberry Island, 151; at Denbeigh, 152.
Middle Plantation, convention at in 1676, 114; York people petition in 1677 to make it the seat of the capital, 52; capitol at, 56, 114; palace at, 109; place named Williamsburg, 56; Mrs. Whaley's school at, 109; church at, 78; college at, 94, 137, 139; county court-house made from Jamestown brick, 56.
Notices of John Rolfe, 75; Pocahontas, 76; Robert Hunt, 87; Richard Buck, 87; Hawte Wyatt, 88; Francis Bolton, 89; Thomas Hampton, 89; Thomas Harrison, 90; Philip Mallory, 90; Batte family, 91; Morgan Godwin, 92; Justinian Aylmer, 92; John Clough, 93; Rowland Jones, 93; John Clayton, 93; James Blair, 94; Peter Fontaine, 95; Hugh Jones, 96; William LeNeve, 96; William Preston, 97; John Hyde Saunders, 97; William Bland, 97; James Madison, 98; Whaley family, 109; Bennett family, 121; Thomas Swann, 123; Allen family, 124; Richard Pace, 124; John Martin, 124; Quincy family, 126; Abraham Peirsey, 127; Nathaniel Powell, 128; Samuel Maycock, 128; Samuel Jordan, 129, John Berkeley, 133; James Crews, 139; William Randolph, 139; Nathaniel Causey, 140; Edward Hill, 140; Paulett family, 142; Byrd family, 143; Capt. Henry Perry, 144; Harwood family, 145; George Menifie, 149, George Keith, 151; George Wythe, 151; Samuel Matthews, 152; Edward Waters, 154; Daniel Gookin, 155; Richard Kingsmill, 148; Digges family, 156; captains at Point Comfort, 161, 162.
Opechancanough, brother of Powhatan, 13; plots the second massacre, 46; captured by Sir William Berkeley and killed by a sentry at Jamestown, 46, 63.

Ovid's *Metamorphoses* translated by George Sandys at Jamestown, 40.
Parliament, surrender of Virginia, in 1652, to the fleet of the, 47.
Peaches raised at Littletown, 149.
Pirates, 160.
Political divisions of Virginia, 116 to 119.
Political Institutions: martial law during the first seven years, 31, 32; popular government instituted by Sir George Yeardley in 1619, 32; London Company dissolved in 1624, free institutions continue, 35, 63; first assertion in 1624 of the doctrine, "No taxation without representation," 48; doctrine reiterated in 1652 and 1765, 48; first declaration of rights and State Constitution, 133; England said to be not connected with the colony of Virginia except by the tie of the crown, 130.
Powhatan, head werowance of Tidewater Virginia, 9; birthplace of Powhatan on James River, 134; his chief town, or werowocomoco, on Purton Bay, York River, 9; afterwards at Orapaks, 11; his dominions, 13; his system of finance, 13; his bodyguard, 13; personal appearance, 13; makes peace with the English after the marriage of his daughter Pocahontas to John Rolfe, 75, 108; his treaty fixed on "Powhatan's Tree," 108; he dies April, 1618; his three brothers, Opitchapan, Opechancanough and Kecatough, 13.
Portraits, at Westover and Lower Brandon, 127; Washington's at Shirley, 140.
Puritans, 90.
Records saved by Drummond, 114; some patents destroyed, 129.
Restoration of Charles II., 48, 64.
Salt works at Dale's Gift, 163.
Schools, East Indian, 130; Symes', 160; Matthew Whaley Model and Practice School, 109; college at Henrico, 136; Schools—
William and Mary College, 94, 137, 139, 147.
Seal of Virginia granted by Charles II., 48.
Service-plate at Jamestown, 81, 82; at Smith's Hundred, 145.
Silk-worms raised by George Sandys at Jamestown, 40.
Slavery and Slave-trade: Negroes sold at Jamestown in 1619, 32; Rev. Morgan Godwin publishes a dissertation against, 92.
Springs: at Greenspring, 108; at Newport News, 155.
State Houses, 44, 45, 51, 52, 56, 59, 64, 110-117; location of first, on river bank, 111, 112; location of second and third, on the Back Street, 19, 59, 116. (Near the magazine.) Mechanics for building the first State House sent for out of England, 45.
Sturgeons caught at Sturgeon's Point, 146.
Tindall's Point, proposed as seat of capital in 1677, 52.
Tobacco, culture of introduced, 75; raised at Jamestown, 30; prevents the growth of the place, 30, 117.
Tombstones at Jamestown, 80, 82-87, 93; at Bachelor's Point, 146; at Four Mile Tree, 123; at Westover, 123; at Swann Point, 123; at King's Creek, 90.
Wells, 26, 29, 61.
Williamsburg (see Middle Plantation).
Wochinchopunk, chief of the Paspaheghs, 11; killed near the glass-house, 12, 102.
Yeardley, Sir George, captain of Sir Thomas Gates' company from the Netherlands, 14; deputy governor, 30; governor and captain-general of Virginia, 32; calls the first popular assembly, 32; his family at Jamestown, 36; his house and lot there, 39; is granted Weyanoke, Flower de Hundred and Stanley Hundred, 127, 144, 152; dies and is buried at Jamestown, 39.

INDEX TO NAMES OF PERSONS AND PLACES.

Accomac, 114, 118, 163.
Adams, 38.
Addams, Ann, 36.
Addison, Thomas, 154.
Adkins, Richard, 88.
Adling, Henry, 24.
Adwalton, 91.
Aiken's Landing, 137.
Alder, Richard, 36.
Algernourne Fort, 161.
Algonquin race, 9.
Alicock, Jeremy, 24.
Allen, Arthur, 122, 124; William, 18, 60, 122, 124, 138.
Allmond's Creek, 135.
Allmond, Samuel, 135.
Amapetough, 10.
Ambler, 98; Edward, 65; John, 57, 59, 79, 85; Richard, 16, 56.
America, 21, 22, 32, 43.
American Union, 61.
Amocnitates Graphicae, 16, 79.
Ampthill, 133.
Anderson, Leroy, 57.
Andros, Edmund, 64, 82, 109.
Andrews, Jenkin, 41; Jocomb, 36.
Apachisco, 75.
Appomattox, 131, 141.
Appomattox Indians, 10, 13, 131.
Appomattox River, 10, 23, 91, 118, 130, 131.
Appumattuck, 10.
Arahateck, 11, 13, 31, 136. (Arrohateck.)
Archer, Gabriel, 23, 24, 120.
Archer's Hope, 20, 23, 31, 35, 55, 88, 106, 148.
Archer's Hope Creek, 20, 55, 78, 88, 106, 148, 149.
Archer's Hope Point, 55.
Argall, Sir Samuel, 30, 31, 32, 44, 63, 76, 106, 128, 147.
Argall's Gift, or Town, 31, 114, 143, 147.
Armistead, Frances, John, 93.
Arnold, Benedict, 131.
Arrundell, Richard, 36.
Ashuaquid, 11.
Ascombe, Abigale, Mary, 37.
Ashley, Ann, 37.
Association for the Preservation of Virginia Antiquities, 18, 61.
Aston, Walter, 140.
Atlantic and Danville Railroad, 124.
Austine, Robert, 36.
Aylmer, Justinian, 91, 92, 93, 159; Theophilus, 92.
Bachelor's Point, 146.
Back Creek, 54.
Back River, 15, 18, 20, 29, 31, 39, 40, 45, 47, 78, 89, 99, 100, 101, 106, 116, 148.
Back Street (see Subject Index).
Bacon, Elizabeth, 104, 158; Nathaniel, Jr., 50, 51, 52, 53, 60, 64, 78, 93, 104, 105, 112, 113, 114, 123, 130, 138, 139, 143, 147, 158; Nathaniel, Sr., 52, 53, 64, 104, 112, 115, 122, 149; Sir Francis, 21.
Bacon, J. R., William E., 169.
Bacon's Castle, 122, 125.
Bacon's Rebellion, 42, 50, 59, 71, 78, 93, 104, 105, 109, 112, 113, 122, 123, 140.
Bacon's Proceedings, 51.
Bailey (Baily), John, 41, 122; Mary, 40, 41, 122; Temperance, 130; Thomas, 112.
Bailey's Creek, 130.
Baldwin, Briscoe G., 57.
Ballard, Anna, Thomas, 104.
Baltimore, Lord, 42, 90.
Bancroft, Richard, 87.
Baptists, 98.
Barbadoes, 85, 120, 135.
Barber, William, 60.
Bargrave, George, John, Robert, 126.
Barker, Henry, 37; William, 126, 128, 129.
Barkewell, 158.
Barney, Edward E., 18, 61, 122; Louise J., 132.
Barrington, Robert, 64.
Barron, James, 161, 162.
Basse's Choice, 121.
Bassett, Capt. William, 162.
Batte family, 91.
Bauldwin, John, 115.
Bausman, Mr., 159.
Beggar's Bush, 129.

Beast, Benjamin, 24.
Behethland, Robert, 24.
Bennett, Edward, 48, 121; Mary, 121; Richard, 48, 63, 111, 121; Robert, 38, 121; Silvestra, 121.
Bently, William, 153.
Berkeley Castle, 133.
Berkeley, Frances, 82, 109, 127; John, 133; Mr., 97; Richard, 142; William, 39, 45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 54, 60, 63, 64, 66, 71, 90, 93, 104, 105, 106, 108, 111, 112, 113, 114, 123, 127, 139, 162.
Berkeley Hundred, 122, 142, 143, 157.
Berlin, 109.
Bermuda City, 130, 131, 136, 150.
Bermuda Hundred, 10, 32, 63, 75, 118, 131, 132, 139.
Bermuda Islands, 26, 62, 75, 87, 131, 134, 150, 154.
Bernado, 103.
Berry, Sir John, 123.
Best, Christopher, 36.
Beverley, Robert, 41, 53, 65, 85, 93, 115; Ursula, 85.
Beverston, 133.
Bew, Robert, 37.
Blackbeard, 160.
Blackburn, Jeremiah, 142.
Black Point, 15, 40.
Blacksmith's Company, 82.
Blair, Archibald, 95; James, 56, 79, 80, 83, 84, 94, 95, 137; John, 108; Sarah, 80, 83, 84.
Blanchard, C. K., Thomas, 57.
Bland, 67, 131; Giles, 142; John, 121, 124, 130, 142, 143; Richard, 130, 139, 143; Theodorick, 97, 124, 143; Thomas, 121; William, 97, 98.
Blaney, Edward, 37, 39, 64.
Bletchingly, 89.
Block-houses, 12, 26, 29, 31, 99-102.
Block-house Hill, 99, 170.
Bluett, Captain, 133.
Blunt, Humphrey, 12, 156.
Blunt Point, 153, 154, 158.
Blunt Point River, 152.
Bohemia, Queen of, 120.
Bollings, 67.
Bolton, Francis, 89, 159.
Bonall, Anthony, John, 159.
Booth, E. G., 150; Henry, 36; John, 38.
Bosler, Frederick, 79.
Boston, 90, 155.
Boswell, William, 159, 160.
Bowler, Tabitha, 71.
Bownas, Samuel, 151.
Boxley, 88.
Boyle, Robert, 94.
Boys, John, 150.
Brandon, 124, 125, 126, 127, 136.
Branton, 123.
Bray, Angelica, James, 104; James, Jr., Mourning, Thomas, 149; Elizabeth, 149.
Bremo, 138, 139.
Brewer, John, 152.
Brewery Point, 45.
Brewster, Edward, 27, 29, 151; Richard, 148.
Brice, Sarah, Thomas, 88, 148.
Bridger, Joseph, 52.
Brinto, Edward, 24.
Bristol, 67, 142.
British, 121, 130, 131, 132, 134.
Brock, R. A., 79.
Broadway, Alexander, 131.
Brodnax, William, 65.
Brookes (Brooks), Edward, John, 24; Richard, 101.
Bromfield, John, 88.
Brougham, 97.
Brown, Alexander, 22; Benjamin, 159.
Browne, Edward, 24; Henry, 123.
Brumfield, James, 24.
Bruster, William, 24.
Bruton Parish, 78, 95; church, 82, 95, 96.
Bucke (Buck), Benoni (Benony), 37, 88; Bridget, 88; Elizabeth, 88, 148; Gershon (Gereyon), 37, 88; Mara, Peleg, 37, 88; Richard, 27, 28, 30, 41, 74, 75, 77, 87, 148.
Buckinghamshire, 93.
Buckland, 144.
Buck Roe, 159.
Bullock, David, 59, 60.
Burgess, Robert, 122.
Burk, John D., 57.
Burras, Anne, 62, 73, 87, 153.
Burrows, Anthony, 37; John, 37, 88, 123.
Burrows Hill, 123.
Burtt, Jane, 36.
Burwell, Carter, 150; Lewis, 65, 121, 122, 149.
Burwell's Bay, 10, 121, 122.
Bushrod, Thomas, 127.
Butler, General, 132, 137; Nathaniel, 35; Thomas, 152.
Bykar's (Bicker) Creek, 129.
Bykar (Bicker) William, 129.
Byrd, 67; John, 143; William, 85, 96, 127, 135, 140, 143.
Cadiz, 22.
Cæsar, Sir Julius, 126.
Calker, 37.
Calvert, Leonard, 160.
Cambridge, Mass., 155.
Cann, 37.

Cape Charles, 120, 163.
Cape Henry, 10, 23, 103, 120.
Capitol, The, 56, 116.
Capps' Point, 160.
Capps, William, 160.
Carleton, Sir Dudley, 41.
Carter, Anne Hill, John, 140; Robert (King), 140, 150; Elizabeth, 140.
Carter's Grove, 125, 150.
Carthagena, 95.
Cary, Archibald, 133, 134; Henry, 160; Lucius, 162; Miles, 65, 112; Wilson Miles, 57, 58.
Cartwright, John, 36.
Cassen, George, Thomas, William, 24.
Cavaliers, 47.
Caweawwassoughes, 13.
Causey, John, Nathaniel, 140.
Causey's Care, 140.
Cawson's, 131.
Cawt, Bryan, 37.
Cecil county, 96.
Cecil, Sir Robert, 22.
Ceeley, Thomas, 153.
Ceeley's, 57.
Chaffin's Bluff, 136.
Challis, Edward, 45, 101.
Chanco, 124.
Champion, John, 65, 86; Rebecca, 65.
Chandler, John, 155.
Chaplin's Choice, 129.
Chaplin, Isaac, 129.
Chapman, Frances, 37; Francis, 124.
Chappell's Creek, 129.
Chappell, Thomas, 129.
Charity Fort, 136.
Charles I., 42, 43, 47, 48, 120, 156, 161, 162.
Charles II., 48, 49, 64, 90, 91.
Charles, Prince, 120, 130, 163.
Charles City, 31, 33, 67, 117, 130, 131, 132.
Charles City county, 11, 50, 67, 70, 95, 97, 118, 119, 127, 128, 130, 143, 144, 145, 146.
Charles City Corporation, 117, 118, 130, 131, 132.
Charles City Point, 130.
Charles Hundred, 31.
Charles River county, 118.
Chastellux, 134.
Chatsworth, 135.
Chatham, 135.
Chauntree, Robert, 37.
Cheesman's Creek, 150.
Cheevers, Mark L., 159.
Chelsea, 55.
Chesapeake Bay, 9, 13, 42, 89.
Chesapeake Indians, 9, 10, 13.
Chesapeake Region, 10.
Chester, 90.
Chester, Anthony: *Scheeps-togt Van*, Frontispiece and p. 34.
Chesterfield county, 11, 119, 131, 132.
Chew, John, 39, 122.
Chicheley, Sir Henry, 64.
Chickahominy River, 11, 13, 106, 117, 119, 145, 146, 147; ferry, 79.
Chiles, Walter, 92.
Chilton, Edward, 54, 56, 140.
Chippokes Creek, Lower, 122; Upper, 117, 118, 124, 126.
Christ Church, 90; Parish, 96.
Chuckatuck Creek, 117, 118.
Church on the Main, 79, 82, 98.
Church Creek, 158.
City Point, 117, 130, 131, 138.
Claiborne, William, 48.
Claremont, 10, 18, 60, 122, 124, 138, 146.
Clarke, Bridget, 37; Richard, 45; Thomas, 36.
Clarkson, 92.
Clayton, John, 16, 54, 71, 93, 94.
Clement, Elizabeth, Jereme, 36.
Clough, John, 84, 93.
Clover Hill Mines, 132.
Clovill (Clovell) Enstace, 24, 69.
Coast Survey, 154.
Cobb, 14.
Cobham, 122.
Cockburn, Admiral, 121, 161.
Cocke, Richard, 138; Temperance, Thomas, 145.
Coggs, Elizabeth, John, 144.
Coke, John, 17, 60, 72; Richard, 17, 60.
Cole, Susannah, 156; William, 144, 153, 155, 156.
Coleman, Anthony, 103.
College Creek, 122.
College Plantation, 122.
Collier, Samuel, 24.
Combes, Austen, 36.
Commonwealth of England, 47.
Confederates, 16, 61, 132, 136, 137, 156.
Congress, 18, 48, 66.
Constable, Robert, 38.
Constellation, The, 84.
Cooke, Edward, 36; John, 37; Roger, 24.
Cooksey, William, 38.
Cookson, William, 105.
Copland, Joseph, 53, 121; Patrick, 137.
Coquonasom, 10.
Cook, 155.
Corker, John, 64.
Cornwallis, Lord, 57.
Cornwallis's Tree, 108.
Corotoman, 162.
Corpus Christi College, 89, 90.

Cotton, Ann, 51.
Cowper, Thomas, 24.
Coxendale, 31, 136.
Craddock, Lieutenant, 163.
Craney Island, 121.
Crews, Edward, Francis, Matthew, 139; James, 105, 139.
Crofton, 93.
Crofts, Richard, 24.
Cromwell, Henry, Oliver, 90.
Crouch, Thomas, 37.
Croyden, 41.
Crump, Lieutenant Thomas, 64, 88, 148. (Crumpe.)
Culpeper, Frances, 39, 114; Lord, 52, 64, 77-109.
Cumberland county, 97.
Curls Neck, 113, 131, 138.
Dale, Sir Thomas, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 40, 62, 63, 100, 118, 130, 131, 136, 139, 163.
Dale's Gift, 163.
Dale Parish, 132.
Damport, Lanslott, 37.
Dandridge, Martha, 93.
Davidson, Alice, 36.
Davies, Jone, 36.
Davis, Capt. James, 161; Thomas, 126.
Dawse, Margery, 37.
Day, James, 121.
Day's Point, 121.
Deacon, Thomas, 142.
Deep Creek, 152, 153.
Delaware, Lord, 14, 27, 28, 29, 30, 43, 62, 70, 74, 75, 76, 87, 110, 140, 143, 151, 153.
Delivrance, The, 154.
Denbeigh (Denbie), 152, 153; church, 153.
Derby, John, 105.
DeVries, Peter, 155.
Dickenson, Jane, 36.
Digby, John, 105.
Digges, 66, 153; Dudley, 156; Edward, 48, 50, 63, 156; Sir Dudley, 48, 156; William, 156.
Digges' Hundred, 131.
Dilke, Clement, 37.
Dinwiddie, 79.
Discovery, The, 21, 23.
Dixon, Richard, 24.
Dods, John, 24.
Douthat, Robert, 145.
Downs, The, 24.
Dowse, John, 136.
Doyley, Cope, 159.
Drake, Sir Francis, 22.
Drayton, Roger, 128.
Drew, Thomas, 128.
Drewry's Bluff, 133.
Drummond, Elizabeth, 86; Sarah, 53, 123; William, 51, 52, 53, 70, 106, 114, 123.
Dublin, 90.
Duke, Elizabeth, Sir Edward, 158.
Durant, Richard, 149.
Durfey, Goodrich, 17, 18, 20, 59, 60, 79, 169.
Durham, 90.
Dutch Gap Canal, 11, 136.
Dutch war, 70, 162.
Dutchmen, 102.
East India School, 130.
Eastern Shore, 89, 106, 118.
Eastern View, 135.
Edinburgh, University of, 94.
Edward, Old, 24.
Edward, William, 53, 54, 85.
Ellingham, 109.
Elay, Lancelot, 47.
Elizabeth City, 63, 74, 89, 158, 159, 160.
Elizabeth City Corporation, 117, 130.
Elizabeth City county, 57, 91, 92, 118, 150, 151, 154, 156, 160.
Elizabeth Fort, 136.
Elizabeth City Parish, 92.
Elizabeth, Princess, 120, 158.
Elizabeth, Queen, 22.
Elizabeth River, 120, 156.
Elliott, Anthony, 93.
Emry, Thomas, 24.
England, 28, 30, 32, 53, 40, 41, 42, 43, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 53, 54, 56, 62, 63, 66, 67, 68, 75, 76, 90, 91, 92, 94, 96, 97, 117, 120, 126, 129, 131, 136, 139, 140, 144, 146, 150, 154, 155, 159, 160.
English, William, 42.
Epes family, 131; Col. Francis, 131.
Episcopal Church, 61, 98.
Episcopalians, 98.
Essex, Earl of, 22.
Essex county, 67.
Evere, Ester, 36.
Fairfax family, 66; Margaret, 87; William, 41, 87, 148.
Falconer, James, 159.
Falkland, Lord, 162.
Falling Creek, 132, 133, 135.
Falls, The, 11, 134.
Farmer, Henry, 36.
Farmville and Powhatan Railroad, 132.
Farrar (Ferrar), Nicholas, 33, 35, 130; William, 43, 130, 136.
Farrar's Island, 118, 132, 136, 137, 138.
Farrell, Hubert, 71.
Fenton, Robert, 24.
Field Book of the American Revolution, 17, 19.

Fife, William, 159.
Filmer family, 67.
Fitchett, John, 103, 170.
Fitt, Ann, Robert, 148.
Fitts, 38; Robert, 38.
Fitzhugh, Mrs., 135.
Flint, Thomas, 152.
Flora Virginica, 94.
Flower, George, 24.
Flower de Hundred, 10, 11, 127, 128, 143, 145.
Fontaine, James, 95; John, 159; Peter, 95.
Force's *Tracts*, 94.
Ford, Robert, 24.
Forrest, Mrs., 73, 87.
Forth, John, 109.
Fort Field, 158, 159.
Forts, 99, 136; Fort Algernourne, 161; Fort Charles, 12, 158, 159, 161; Fort Henry, 12, 158, 159, 161; Fort Point Comfort, Fort George, Fort Monroe, 162; Fort Charity, Mount Malado, Fort Elizabeth, Fort Patience, 136; Fort Nelson, 57; Fort West, 134.
Foster, John, 36.
Foster's *Oxford Matriculates*, 92.
Fouler, Francis, 36.
Four Mile Creek, 138.
Four Mile Tree, 20, 31, 123.
Fowler, John, 88, 148.
Fowler's Neck, 88, 148.
Fowke, Gerard, 60.
Fox, Capt., 48.
France, 49, 95.
French Huguenots, 10.
Frigate Landing, 16, 45.
Frith, Richard, 24.
Gaill, Elias, 37.
Garret, Will, 24.
Gates, Sir Thomas, 12, 22, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 40, 62, 63, 74, 75, 87, 99, 100, 106, 132, 134, 136, 151, 154, 158; Thomas, 124.
Gatesville, 132.
Gather, John, 36.
Gauler, Mr., 52, 115.
General Assembly, 16, 31, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 52, 53, 60, 63, 64, 70, 76, 77, 78, 91, 94, 96, 110, 111, 112, 114, 117, 118, 122, 126, 127, 131, 136, 137, 143, 162.
General Court, 53, 89, 92, 110, 112.
George, The, 40, 41, 150.
George II., 133.
Gibbs, Lieutenant John, 127.
Gibson, Frances, 36.
Gift of God, The, 150.
Gilbert, 22.
Gill, Alexander, 36.
Gilliam, John, 72, 170.
Girardin, L. H., 16, 71, 79.
Glass-house (see Subject Index).
Glebe Land, 87, 88, 89, 97.
Gloucester county, 12, 67, 94, 105, 113.
Gloucester Neck, 67.
Gloucester Point, 52, 114.
Gloucestershire, 133.
Glover, Henry, 38.
Godwin, Morgan, Thomas, 92.
Goodspeed, The, 21, 23.
Goegen, 155.
Gooch, Sir William, 95.
Goochland county, 139.
Goode's Creek, 134.
Goode, John, 134.
Goodwins, 67.
Gookin, Daniel, 154, 155, 156; Daniel, Jr., 154, 155; John, 155; Sir Vincent, 155.
Goose Island Flats, 16.
Goose Hill, 15, 38, 40, 41.
Gosnold (Gosnoll), Anthony, 24; Bartholomew, 23, 24, 69.
Gorges, Sir Ferdinando, 22.
Gough, John, 93.
Gouldsmith, Nicholas, 37.
Gourganey (Gurgany), Mr., 138, 147.
Governor's House, 106-109.
Governor's Land, 18, 147.
Grant, General, 131, 132.
Graues (Graves), George, 37.
Graves, Thomas, 145.
Gravesend, 63, 76.
Gray, Thomas, 123.
Graye, Jane, Thomas, William, 38.
Gray's Creek, 21, 122, 123.
Green, John, 91.
Greene, John, 38; Sisley, 36.
Greenspring, 18, 52, 57, 59, 85, 86, 105, 107, 108, 109, 114.
Greenway, 146.
Grendon, Sarah, Thomas, 140.
Grevett, 38; John, 38.
Grigsby, Hugh Blair, 83.
Grimes, Ann, 36.
Grindall, Edward, 40.
Grove, John, 149.
Grymes family, 124.
Gurgany (Gourgainey), Ann, 138; Edward, 138, 147.
Hackluyt, Richard, 22.
Hall, Amy; Christopher, 148; George, 36; John, 38; Susan, 36.
Halson, George, 159.
Halthrop, Stephen, 24.
Hamlin, John, 128.
Hammond, Mainwaring, 162.

Hamor, Ralph, 29, 36, 39, 75, 100; Mrs., 36.
Hampton, 23, 57, 145, 149, 151, 156, 158, 159, 160, 161.
Hampton Parish, 92.
Hampton River, 12, 158, 159, 161.
Hampton Roads, 156, 162.
Hampton, Thomas, 78, 89, 101, 110, 111, 169; William, 89.
Hansford, Mr., 48.
Hardiman, Frances, John, Henrietta, Maria, Sarah, 128.
Hardings, 132.
Harlow, Anthony, 38.
Harrington, Edward, 24.
Harris, George, 140; Thomas, 138, 140; William, 103, 142.
Harrison family, 124.
Harrison's Landing, 142.
Harrison, Benjamin, 84, 95, 136, 142; Hannah, 84; Nathaniel, 126, 129; Sarah, 95; Thomas, 90; William Henry, 142; William, 148.
Harrop (Harup) Parish, 149, 161.
Hartt, Capt., 37.
Hartley, William, 37.
Hartwell, Henry, 54, 78, 170.
Harvard College, 126, 160.
Harvard, John, 126, 160.
Harvey, Sir John, 38, 39, 42, 43, 44, 45, 63, 77, 103, 106, 110, 127, 144, 161.
Harwood family, 145; Anne, Agnes, Joseph, Samuel, 145; Thomas, 89; William, 150.
Harup (Harrop), 149, 161.
Hawkins, Sir John, 22.
Heacham, 75.
Hebbs, Thomas, 37.
Henrico, 29, 31, 32, 33, 63, 67, 70, 94, 111, 112, 118, 119, 130, 136, 137, 138, 145, 151.
Henrico county, 118, 132, 145.
Henrietta Maria, 42.
Henry, Prince of Wales, 29, 120, 136.
Henry VII., 88.
Hereford, 92, 138.
Herefordshire, 123.
Herring Creek, 143.
Heyley, Wilbis, 151.
Heyman, Peter, 160.
Hichcocke, Kilibett, 36.
Hichmore (Hickmore), Mrs., vx., 37.
Higginson, Humphrey, 149; Robert, 46.
Hill, Edward, Jr., Edward, Elizabeth, 140; Nicholas, 121; Thomas, 45, 127.
Hinton, John, 37; Sir Thomas, 153.
Hog Island, 20, 27, 31, 41, 55, 122.
Holland, 136, 149.
Holland, Gabriel, Mary, 40.
Holmes, Capt., 37.
Holt, Randall, 41, 122.
Homewood, 122.
Hone, Catherine, 93; Theophilus, 52, 65, 70, 92, 93.
Hooe, Rice, 127.
Hooke, Francis, 161.
Hooker, Thomas, 36.
Hope, James Barron, 61.
Hopley, Catherine, 61.
Hough, Francis, 153.
Houlgrave, Nicholas, 24.
Howard, Lord Thomas, 22; Lord of Effingham, 64, 109.
Howell, Andrew, 37.
Howellton, 129.
Howlett, Randall, 36.
Howlett's Battery, 137.
Hudson, Edward, 37.
Hull, Nathaniel, 40.
Hume family, 66.
Hunt, Robert, 24, 25, 73, 74, 87; William, 146.
Hutchings, Amy, John, 86.
Hutchinson, Robert, 111.
Indian House Thicket, 158.
Indians, 9, 10, 11, 12, 14, 25, 26, 29, 33, 35, 46, 51, 53, 69, 75, 76, 99, 100, 102, 103, 108, 112, 113, 120, 124, 128, 134, 135.
Invincible Armada, 22.
Ipswich, 92.
Ireland, 90, 155.
Isgraw (Isgrave), John, 37.
Isham, Henry(Mary, William, 139.
Isle of Wight county, 10, 118, 121, 122, 152.
Italians, 105.
Jackson, Ephraim, 37; John, 37, 64, 150; vx, 37.
James City, 19, 31, 39, 41, 51, 52, 54, 58, 60, 64, 70, 78, 92, 101, 116, 130; church, 96; parish, 31, 89, 97, 98.
James City county, 11, 16, 50, 60, 70, 71, 77, 118, 119, 128, 132, 147, 149, 150.
James City Corporation, 117, 123, 130, 136.
James River, 14, 15, 31, 51, 53, 55, 61, 67, 82, 88, 94, 110, 118, 120, 124, 129, 131, 132, 150, 152, 156, 160.
Jamestown (see Subject Index).
Jamestown Society, 60.
James I., 22, 23, 75, 77, 120, 136, 158.
James, Richard, 52, 56; Thomas, 90.
Jaquelin, Edward, 56, 65, 82; Martha, 82; Edward, Jr., 82.
Jarvis, Capt. Thomas, 158.
Jefferson, John, 127; Thomas, 127, 139.
Jefferys, Nathaniel, vx, 37.

Jeffryes, Col. Herbert, 64, 123.
Johnson, Elizabeth, 149; James Bray, 149; John, 38, 40, 56, 65.
Johnson, vx, 38; infans, 38; William, 24; Philip, 149.
Johnston, Joseph E., 139, 156.
Jonas, William, 40.
Jones, Hugh, 56, 67, 96; Roger, 155; Rowland, 93; William, 38; vx, 38.
Jones' Neck, 118, 131, 132, 138.
Jordan, Cicely, 129; George, 123; Samuel, 129, 131.
Jordan's Jorney, 129, 130, 139.
Juxon family, 67.
Kaquothocum, 10.
Kean, Alice, 38.
Kecoughtan, 12, 23, 31, 33, 154, 156, 158, 159.
Kecoughatan Indians, 12, 13, 156.
Keith's Creek, 150.
Keith, George, 94, 150, 151; John, 150, 151; Martha, Susan, 150.
Kempe, Richard, 44, 45, 46, 63.
Kendall, Capt. George, 24, 60, 69.
Kennedy, Alexander, 160.
Kenwan Creek, 144.
Kent Island, 42.
Kent, England, 87, 88, 126, 160.
Key, Thomas, 153.
Kimage's Creek, 140.
King, Mr., 133.
King and Queen county, 91.
King's Creek, 71, 90, 142.
Kingsmill, Elizabeth, 149; Richard, 64, 148.
Kingsmill, Plantation, 148.
Kingston, Ellis, 24.
Kirkman, Francis, 92.
Kiskiack, 150.
Knight, Edward, 103; John, Mary, 85; Peter, 47, 121.
Knowles, John, 54, 90.
Kullaway, John, 36.
La Fayette, 57.
Langley, Sarah, 36.
Lawarr, 29.
Lawne, Christopher, 122.
Lawne's Creek, 118, 122.
Lawrence, Richard, 51, 52, 53, 60, 71, 109.
Lawson, Capt., 29; Chri., 36; vx, 36.
Laxon, William, 24.
Laydon, John, 24, 62, 73, 74, 87, 153; Virginia, 62, 74; Anne, Alice, Katherine, Margaret, 74.
Lee, 59; Light Horse Harry, 140; William, 59, 79, 85, 109; Robert E., 135, 139, 140.
Lee Hall, 152.
Leet, 38.
Leister, Thomas, 36.
Le Neve, Williams, 96, 97.
Lewis, Eleanor, Fielding, Thomas, Warner, 145.
Ley, Chief Justice, 63.
Leyden, Frontispiece and p. 34.
Lightfoot, John, 36, 40; Richard, Philip, 146.
Lincoln, President, 131.
Little England, 160.
"Little Powhatan," 11, 134.
"Little Wanton," 76.
Littletown, 149.
Lister, Edward, 128.
London, 35, 67, 84, 92, 121, 124, 126, 129, 130, 140, 142, 143, 144, 146, 152.
London Company, 30, 32, 33, 44, 103, 127, 133, 134, 136, 142, 144, 145, 147, 150, 154, 155, 158.
London, Bishop of, 94.
Longden, 140.
Longfield, 138.
Lossing, Benson J., 17, 19.
Love, William, 24.
Low Countries, 22.
Lower Norfolk county, 90, 120, 155.
Lowry, John, 160.
Loyd, Math., 37; Cornelius, 142.
Lucas, Thomas, 60.
Ludwell, Hannah, 84; Hannah Philippa, 109; Philip, 18, 54, 56, 65, 82, 84, 108, 109, 114, 115, 116, 127; Thomas, 50, 112, 116.
Lunsford, Sir Thomas, 66.
Lynn, 120.
Lynnhaven Bay, 120.
Lyon, Elizabeth, 36.
Macock, Sarah, 36.
Madison, James, 57, 98; John, 57.
Maine, France, 95.
Main, The, 20, 35, 38, 79, 98, 101, 105.
Main Church (Upper Church, in James City Parish, Church on the Main), 79, 82, 98.
Mallory, Elizabeth, Martha, Nathaniel, Roger, Thomas, William, 90, 91; Philip, 48, 90, 91, 159.
Malvern Hill, 138, 141, 142.
Manakin (Monacans), 10, 134, 135.
Mapsoc Creek, 127, 144, 145.
Margaret, The, 142.
Margaret and John, 148.
Marion Hill, 134.
Marshall, John, 139; Robert, 40; Roger, 46.
Martian, Nicholas, 42.
Martin, Dorcas, 126; John, 24, 27, 69, 126; Richard, 126, 150.
Martin's Brandon, 31, 126.

Martin's Hundred, 93, 147, 149, 150.
Mary and Margaret, 73.
Maryland, 42, 90, 96, 160.
Mary's Mount, 154.
Mason, Ann, Lemuel, 120; Dorothea, 75.
Massachusetts, 128, 155.
Matheman, John, 36.
Mathews Manour, 152.
Mathews, John, 152; Samuel, 43, 48, 64, 152, 161.
Mathew Whaley Model and Practice School, 109.
Mathomank, 10.
Matoaka, 76.
Matoax, 131.
May, Mr., 92.
Maycock, Samuel, Sarah, 124, 128.
Maycock's Plantation, 128.
Mayflower, The, 128.
Maynard, Capt., Henry, 160.
Mayo, William, 135.
McCabe, J. C., 159.
McClellan, George B., 139, 142.
McCreary, Mr., 58.
Meade, Bishop William, 17, 79, 80, 91.
Meadowville, 82, 132.
Mease, William, 35, 158, 159.
Menifie, George, 37, 39, 42, 43, 45, 53, 64, 144, 149.
Mentis, Thomas, 37.
Merchant's Hope, 126, 129; Merchant's Hope Church, 129.
Mercer, Thomas, 144.
Merrimac, The, 16, 156.
Merton College, 93.
Middle Plantation, 52, 56, 78, 88, 93, 114.
Middlesex, 67, 144.
Midwinter, Francis, 24.
Miles, Alice, John, 123.
Mill Creek, 20, 159.
Milton, Richard, 146.
Minge, Collier, 146.
Minnesota, The, 156.
Mokete, 10, 121.
Mole, Samuel, 111.
Monacans (Manakins), 10, 134, 135.
Monitor, The, 156.
Monroe, Fort, 161.
Monumental Church, 82.
Morish, Edward, 24.
Morton's Bay, 120.
Morton, Matthew, 120.
Moryson (Morrison), Charles, 162; Francis, 64, 82, 103, 123, 162; Richard, Robert, Sir Richard, 162.
Moss family, 67.
Moulston, Thomas, 36.
Mount Malado, 136.
Mouton, Thomas, 24.
Mudge, William, 38.
Mulberry Island, 27, 151, 152; church, 96, 152.
Mutton, Richard, 24.
Nansemond, 89, 90, 119, 145, 162; river, 10, 117, 121.
Nansemond Indians, 10, 154.
Naugatuck, The, 156.
Naseway Shoal, 121.
Neck of Land (Charles City), 131, 132, 137, 138.
Neck of Land (James City), 20, 31, 35, 88, 100, 148.
Negroes and Indians' Advocate, 92.
Nelson, George, 36; Francis, 62.
Nestell, Peter, 57.
Netherlands, 27.
Newce, Thomas, William, 155.
New College, 89.
New England, 90, 117.
New Kent county, 146.
Newell, David, Jonathan, 54, 170.
New Norfolk county, 89, 118; Lower, 118; Upper, 89, 118.
Newport, Christopher, 14, 22, 23, 25, 26, 29, 62, 69, 73, 134; Thomas, 14.
Newport Newce, 155.
Newport News, 117, 118, 154, 155, 156.
Newport-snuw, 155.
Newstead, 136.
Newton, Thomas, 57, 58.
New Town, 38.
Newtown Haven River, 121.
New York, 98, 159.
Nibley, 142.
Nicholson, Sir Francis, 10, 56, 64, 109, 116, 160.
Nixon, William, 159.
Nonsuch, 11, 134.
Norfolk, 57, 86, 98, 121.
Norfolk and Portsmouth Herald, 57.
Norfolk Beacon, 89.
Norfolk county, 75, 119, 121.
Northampton county, 154.
Northamptonshire, 139, 146.
North Carolina, 51, 96, 123, 160.
Northern Neck, 67.
Norton, William, 103.
Norwood, Henry, 162.
Norsworthy, Tristram, 121.
Nutmeg Quarter, 153.
Oakland, 159.
O'Connor, James, 57.
Oholase, 10.
Okewell, 91.
Old Churches, etc., 91.
Old Edward, 24.
O'Neill, Grace, 154.
Opechancanough, 13, 46, 63, 108.

Opitchapan, 13, 14.
Opussoquionuske, 10.
Orapaks, 11.
Orgain, Martha Allen, 60.
Ormside, 97.
Osbourn, John, 38, 111.
Osbourn's Wharf, 132.
Othway, Thomas, 37.
Ottahotin, 13.
vx Ousbourn, 38.
Oxford county, 93.
Oxford Matriculates, 92.
Oxford University, 51, 87, 89, 91, 92, 93, 97.
Pace, George, Richard, 35, 124, 128, 144; Isabella, 124, 144.
Pace's Pains (Paines), 20, 124, 128, 144.
Pagan River, 10, 121.
Pagan Point, 10, 121.
Page family, 67; Elizabeth, 104; John, 104, 109, 159, 170; Mary, 109; Matthew, 70, 109.
Painter, Elinn, 38.
Palace, The, 109.
Pamlico Sound, 160.
Pamunkey, 13, 114.
Pamunkey River, 13.
Panton, Anthony, 44.
Parahunt, 11, 134.
Park, 39.
Parliament, 22, 47, 63.
Parson's Creek, 129.
Partin, Robert, 158.
Paspahegh, 11, 12, 13, 23, 102, 111, 146.
Paspahegh Old Fields, 104, 114, 147.
Paspahegh Indian Town, 12, 124, 146.
Passmore Creek, 15.
Passmore, Thomas, 15, 37, 40.
Pate, Thomas, 105.
Patience, The, 154.
Paulett, Lord, Robert, 142, 143; Thomas, 142, 143, 147.
Peale, 140.
Pecock, Nat., 24.
Peirsey (Piersey), Abraham, 40, 127, 145, 153; Elizabeth, 39, 127; Mary, 127.
Peirsey's Hundred, 127, 128.
Pembroke Farm, 159.
Penington, John, 24.
Peninsula, The, 61, 67, 156.
Pennsylvania, 159.
Pepisco, 10.
Pepiscumah, 10.
Peppet, Gilbert, 151, 152.
Percy (Percie), George, 10, 12, 20, 24, 62, 106, 161; William Algernon de, 161.
Perry, Henry, 144; William, 123, 124, 144.
Petect, John, 48.
Petersburg, 57, 124, 130, 131.
Pettus, Elizabeth, Mourning, Thomas, 149.
Phillips, General, 130, 131.
Phipps, John, 103.
Pianketank, 12.
Pickett, George E., 139.
Pickhouse, Dru(e), 24.
Pierce, Jane, 39, 41, 75; Jone, 36; William, 39, 40, 41, 75, 151, 152.
Pierse, Thomas, 76.
Pink, William, 40.
Pising, Edward, 24.
Pitch and Tar Swamp, 15, 19, 38, 39, 53, 54, 71, 106, 115, 116.
Plantations across the water, 20.
Plymouth, 128.
Pocahontas, 63, 75, 76, 87, 108, 123, 137, 151.
Pochins, 12, 158.
Polentine, John, 136.
Poles, 102.
Point Comfort (Old Point), 27, 110, 120, 156, 161, 162.
Point Comfort Fort, 161, 162.
Point Hope, 155.
Political Divisions, 117-119.
Pomell, Elizabeth, 36.
Pontes, John, 36.
Poole, Robert, 151, 152.
Poolley, Greville, 130.
Pope, George, 38.
Popham, Sir John, 22.
Port Newce, 155.
Portsmouth, 57.
Porter, Abraham, 37.
Pory, John, 41, 76, 77.
Pott, Elizabeth, 36; Francis, 42, 45, 161; John 36, 39, 41, 43, 45, 63, 116, 148.
Potomac River, 67.
Powell, Ensign, 12, 102; John, 89; Nathaniel, 24, 63, 128; Thomas, 129; William, 30, 64, 89, 147.
Powell's Creek, 124, 128, 129.
Powell (Powle), Brook, 126, 128, 129.
"Powhatan," 134.
Powhatan (Indian werowance), 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 63, 75, 102, 134, 146.
Powhatan Creek, 16, 20, 148.
Powhatan Indians, 10, 11, 13, 134, 146.
Powhatan River, 51.
Powhatan Swamp, 108, 109.
Powhatan's Tree, 108.
Poythress, Joseph, 128; Miss, 76.
Prescott, Edward, 53.
Present State of Virginia, The, 67, 96.

Presque Isle, 131, 139.
Preston, Charles Mayes, William, William Stephenson, 97.
Price, Edward, 37.
Princess Anne county, 119.
Prince George county, 10, 119, 124, 128, 129, 130.
Pritchard, Thomas, 153.
Privy Council, 136.
Proctor's Creek, 11.
Profit, Jonas, 24.
Provence, 149.
Pryor, Roger A., 98.
Puritan, 47, 90.
Purton (Poetan, Powhatan) Bay, 9.
Puttock, Lieut., 12, 103.
Quakers, 92.
Quarter Court, 108, 111, 148.
Queen's College, 97.
Queen's Creek, 127, 145.
Queen's Street, Hampton, 160.
Quiney, Ellen, Thomas, 126; Richard, 126, 129.
Quioughcohannock, 10, 12, 124.
Ragged Islands, 121.
Rainslipp, 144.
Raleigh, Sir Walter, 22.
Raleigh Tavern, 58.
Ralye, Andrew, 37.
Ramsey, Edward, 48.
Randolph, Anne, Innes, 136; Beverley, 135; Bishop, 135; Henry, 111, 112; John, 76, 131, 138; Peter, 135; Richard, 58, 71, 79, 138, 139; Robert, 135; William, Jr., 135; William, Sr., 134, 138, 139; Edward, Edmund, Elizabeth, Henry, Isham, Mary, Richard, Sir John, Thomas, William, 139.
Rappahannock River, 109, 124.
Rappahannock Neck, 67.
Ratcliffe, John, 23, 24, 62, 69, 73, 106, 124, 161; Elkington, 36.
Ravenett, William, 36.
Ravenscroft, Thomas, 128.
Rayner, Wassell, 37.
Read, James, 24.
Reculver, 87.
Reddish, John, 38.
Reigate, 89.
Reignolds, 37.
Revolution, American, 97, 98, 109, 133, 136, 147, 150, 162.
Rich, Robert, 75.
Richard III., 88.
Richardson, Robert, 126.
Richmond, 11, 59, 60, 79, 82, 120, 131, 132, 143, 147.
Ricks, Richard, 54.
Riddall, Sarah, 37.
Roanoke, 76, 138.
Roanoke River, 13.
Roberts, James, 38.
Robins, Obedience, 154.
Robinson, John, 24; Mrs. Mary, 145.
Rochedale Creek, 132.
Rochedale Hundred, 131, 132.
Rodes, William, 24.
Rogers, William B., 58.
Rolfe, Elizabeth, 36; Henry, 76; John, 29, 39, 63, 75, 76, 87, 151, 152, 137; Thomas, 76, 87, 123.
Rolfe's Creek, 123.
Rookins, William, 122.
Rossingham, Edward, 127.
Rosegill, 109.
Royal Commissioners, 52, 123.
Royal Society, 94, 144.
Royal Society *Transactions*, 94, 96.
Ruese, Roger, 36.
Sadler, Ann, Ellen, 126; John, 126, 129.
St. James Northam, 97.
St. Mary's Hall, 90.
St. Mary's Church in Smith's Hundred, 145.
Salisbury, Earl of, 22.
Salter, Elizabeth, 36.
Sanders, Richard, 45.
Sands, George, Thomas, 36.
Sandy Gut, 47.
Sandy Bay, 16, 17, 19, 51, 170.
Sandy Point, 12, 118, 146.
Sandys, George, 20, 40, 103, 149; Sir Edwin, 33, 35, 40, 133, 145.
Sarah Constant, The, 21, 23.
Sassafras Parish, 96.
Saunders, John, 57; John Hyde, 97; Major, 57; Robert, 58.
Savage, Thomas, 14.
Sawier, William, 37.
Scotland, 49, 66, 67.
Scotland Wharf, 123.
Scott, Anthony, 28; Henry, 37; Nic., 24.
Scrivener, Master, 26, 73.
Sea Venture, 26, 40, 131, 154.
Seawell, Henry, 120.
Selden, Miles, 135; William, 159.
Semple, James, 58.
Senff, Charles H., 138.
Senior, John, 103.
Sewell's Point, 120.
Shakespeare, Judith, 126; William, 67, 126, 158.
Sharpe, John, 28, 30; Samuel, 131.
Sharpless, Edward, 36.
Sheffield's Plantation, 132.
Sheffield, Thomas, 132.
Shelley, John, 37; Walter, 145.
Sheppard, Robert, 37.

Sherley, Cecilly, Thomas, 140.
Sherley (Shirley) Hundred, 31, 131, 139, 140, 142.
Sherwood Forest, 146, 157.
Sherwood, Peceable, 37; William, 52, 53, 54, 56, 65, 78, 84, 99, 115, 116.
Shirley (Sherley) Hundred, 31, 131, 139, 140, 141, 142.
Shorcham, The, 160.
Short, John, 24.
Shropshire, 92.
Shurke, George, 38.
Sidney, 22.
Simons, Richard, 24.
Skiffes Creek, 11, 118, 150.
Skipwith, Sir William, 66.
Skore, Simeon, 14.
Skyren, Henry, 159.
Smalwood, Randall, 38.
Small, Robert, 24.
Smethes, William, 24.
Smith (Smyth), Abigail, 122, 149; H. B., 18; John, 11, 22, 23, 24, 26, 33, 62, 73, 76, 102, 106, 123, 134, 135, 142, 146, 153, 161; Osten, 37; Roger, 36, 39, 148; Thomas, 22, 35, 36, 70, 145, 146, 153.
Smithfield, 10, 70.
Smith's Fort, 123.
Smith's (Smyth's) Hundred, 145.
Smith's Island, 163.
Snarsbrough, Francis, 24.
Snowe, Rebecca, Sarah, 37.
Soldiers' Home, 12.
Somers, Matthew, 154; Sir George Somers, 22, 26, 40, 154.
Southampton, Earl of, 33, 35, 145, 158.
Southampton Hundred, 145.
Southampton River, 33, 158.
Southern Literary Messenger, 17, 58, 71.
Southern, John, 37, 40, 64.
Southey, Ann, Mrs., 38.
Southwark Parish, 71, 93.
Spaniards, 21, 23, 161.
Spelman, Henry, 11, 76, 135.
Spence, infans, 38; vx Spence, 38; William, 38, 64, 88, 148.
Spencer, Kathren, 36; Nicholas, 64; William, 40.
Spilman, Thomas, 37.
Spooner, John, 159.
Spotswood, Alexander, 159.
Spraggins, Radulph, 45, 78, 101, 111.
Stacy, Robert, 126.
Stafford, Benedict, 155.
Stafford county, 140.
Staffordshire, 133.
Stanley Hundred, 151, 152.
Starkey, Elinor, Elizabeth, 37.
Starving Time, The, 26, 74, 99, 125.
Stegge, Thomas, 45, 112.
Stephens, Elizabeth, 128; Richard, 37, 39, 127; Samuel, 39, 127.
Stevens Battery, The, 156.
Stevenson, John, 24.
Stillwell, Nicholas, 46.
Stith, John, 139; William, 137, 139.
Stockden, Jonas, 158.
Stoiks, Goodman, vx Stoiks, *infans* Stoiks, 38.
Stoke-Bruern, 146.
Stokes, Christopher, 153.
Stomer, Alexander, 46, 99.
Ston, Moyes, 37.
Strachey, William, 9, 13, 14, 28, 29, 69.
Stratford on Avon, 126.
Stratton, Joseph, 153.
Strawberry Banks, 159.
Studley, Thomas, 24.
Sturgeon Point, 11, 146.
Sturgis, Symon, 126.
Suffolk county, 129.
Sulley, Thomas, 100.
Summerfield, 160.
Sunken Marsh Creek, 124.
Sunken Marsh Plantation, 124.
Supplies: First, 25, 62, 73; second, 26, 62, 102; third, 26, 62, 75, 134.
Surry county, 10, 50, 70, 71, 77, 84, 89, 93, 95, 119, 122, 123, 124.
Surry, Sussex and Southampton Railroad, 123.
Swann, Matthew, 70; Samuel, 123; Thomas, 52, 112, 123; William, 123.
Swann's Point, 20, 123.
Swinbrook, 93.
Swinhow, Thomas, 144.
Swinyards (Swiniares, Ewineherds), 144.
Symes, Benjamin, 160.
Symonds, Dorothy, 90.
Tabb, Major Thomas, 158.
Taberer, Thomas, 121.
Tackonekintaco, 10.
Tahahcoope, 10.
Tankard, William, 24.
Tanxpowhatan, 11, 134.
Tanxweyanoke, 127, 144, 145.
Tappahanna Indians, 10, 13.
Tappahanna country, 31.
Tappahanna Marsh, 10.
Tarleton, Col., 16, 133.
Tassantassees, 14.
Tavin, Henry, 24.
Tayloe, William, 149.
Taylor, Fortune, 36; John, 128, 129; Jeremiah, 159.
Teach, 160.
Tedington, 146.

Texas, 60.
Thatcher, 57.
Thompson, Andrew, 159; George, Maurice, 142; William, 90, 142.
Thorpe, George, 137, 142; Otho, 52.
Throckmorton, Sir William, 142.
Throgmorton, Kellam, 24.
Tidewater Virginia, 14, 75.
Timson family, 67.
Tindall's Point, 52, 114, 162.
Tirehtough, 10.
Tobacco Point, 127, 145.
Tockwogh, 13.
Tooke, James, 38.
Tortugas, 161.
Totten, Dr. Silas, 17, 79.
Townsend, Richard, 56.
Tracy, William, 128, 142.
Travers, Raleigh, 60.
Travis, Amy, 86; Champion, 57, 58, 59, 65; Edward, 56, 64, 65, 86; Edward Champion, 65, 80, 86; Elizabeth, John, Susannah, 86.
Traylor, R. L., 134.
Treasurer, The, 32.
Tree, Richard, 40, 45.
Tree Hill Plantation, 134, 135.
Trinity College, 92.
Tucker's Hole, 40.
Tucker, William, 142.
Turkey Island, 135, 138, 139.
Turkey Island Bend, 131, 139; creek, 118.
Tuttey's Neck, 149.
Twine, John, 76.
Tyler, John, 60, 97, 146; Mary, 97; Samuel, 57, 58, 149.
United States, 21, 22, 33, 66, 76, 116, 146.
University College, 77.
University of Cambridge, 77, 85, 128.
Upper and Nether Hundreds, 131.
Upper Chippokes Creek, 10.
Upton, John, 148.
Utie, John, 43, 122.
Utopia Bottoms, 149.
Vander, Peter, Frontispiece and p. 34.
Varina, 76, 94, 137.
Vienna, 109.
Vincenzio, 103.
Virginia, The, 27, 151, 156.
Virginia Convention of 1776, 57, 58.
Virginia Historical Register, 60.
Virginia Gazette, 97.
Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, 92.
Visitation of Essex, 92.
Visitation of London, 92.
Vnger, William, 24.
Wakefield, 93, 124.
Waldo, Capt., 73.
Walker, George, 24, 151; Jacob, 160.
Waller, Charles, 36; Ensign, 12, 102; John, 24.
Wallace, James, 159.
Walnut Grove, 146.
Warascoyack Indians, 10, 13; county, 118; plantation, 46, 121.
Waraseoyack River, 121.
Warcop, 97.
Ward, John, 127; William, 37.
Ward's Creek, 126, 127.
Warden, John, 95.
Wareham Ponds, 78, 149.
Warner Hall, 145.
Warnett, Thomas, 89.
Warren, C. W., 122; William, 42; Thomas, 60.
Warrington, Lewis, 161; Thomas, 159.
Warwick, 133.
Warwick county, 12, 67, 118, 153, 156, 158.
Warwick River, 151, 152, 153.
Warwickshire, 133, 139.
Warwick Town, 153.
Washer, Ensign, 122.
Washington, City of, 50, 60.
Washington, George, 93, 140.
Waters' Creek, 154.
Waters, Edward, Margaret, William, 154.
Watson, John, 45.
Watts Creek, 154.
Weanock, 10.
Webster, Jane, Judith, Lucy, Roger, 88, 148; Richard, 54.
Webb(e), Goodman, 38; Thomas, 24.
Wendover, 93.
Werowocomoco, 11, 12.
West family, 66; Anthony, 37; Frances, 153; Francis, 11, 29, 30, 63, 134, 135, 140, 143; Henry, 143; John, 38, 43, 110, 140, 143; Nathaniel, 140, 143, 153; Thomas, 38, 140, 143; William, 14.
West Indies, 23, 32, 62, 92.
Westminster Abbey, 92.
Westover, 96, 97, 123, 127, 140, 142, 143, 144, 157.
Westmoreland county, England, 97.
West Point, 48, 143.
West's Sherley Hundred, 131, 140.
Weyanoke Indians, 10, 11, 13, 127, 144.
Weyanoke, 127, 144, 145, 157.
Weyanoke Point, 127.
Weyohohomo, 10.
Weynock, 144.
Weyman, Ferdinando, 27.
Weyongopo, 10.

Whaley, James, Mary, Mathew, Thomas, 109.
Whitaker, Alexander, William, 136.
Whitby, 134.
Whitby, William, 111.
White, John, 78, 110; Mr., 71; William, 24, 54.
White Chappell, 84.
Whitehaven, 159.
Whitmore, Robert, 37.
Whittington, Sarah, William, 139.
Wilberforce, 92.
Wilkinson, William, 24, 159.
Willcox family, 144; John V., 128.
Williams, Hugh, 36.
William and Mary College, 17, 57, 58, 61, 67, 79, 94, 95, 96, 97, 98, 109, 137, 139, 147, 151.
William and Mary College Quarterly, 92.
William and Mary Parish, 96.
Williamsburg, 18, 56, 57, 58, 64, 72, 78, 79, 82, 93, 95, 96, 109, 116, 137, 161.
Willoughby's Sand Spit, 120.
Willoughby, Lord, Thomas, 120.
Wilmington Parish, 128.
Wilton, 135.
Wilton, Nancy, 136.
Windmill Point, 127.
Windsor, 94.
Wingfield, Edward Maria, 22, 24, 62, 69, 87, 134.
Winsor's *Narrative and Critical History of America*, 61, 100.
Winthrop, Governor, 90.
Wise, Henry A., 21, 60.
Wochinchopunck, 11, 102.
Woddrop, John, Margaret, 145.
Woodhouse, Thomas, 111, 170.
Woodliffe, John, 129, 142.
Worcester county, 138.
Woodward, Mary, 36.
Wormeley, Christopher, 92, 93, 161; Ralph, 109.
Wotten, Thomas, 24.
Wriothesley, Henry, 22, 33, 158.
Wyatt family, 66; Anthony and Nicholas, 129; Edward, George, Hawt(e), Sir Henry, Sir Thomas, 88; Sir Francis, 33, 35, 36, 43, 45, 63, 88, 89, 128, 153; Hawte, Margaret, 36.
Wynne, Capt., 73.
Wythe, George, 151, 161; Margaret, Thomas, 151.
Yates, Elizabeth, 97; William, 98.
Yeardley, Argall, Elizabeth, Frances, 36; George, 27, 30, 31, 32, 33, 36, 39, 63, 66, 76, 106, 127, 128, 142, 144, 145, 148, 152; Temperance, 36, 152.
Yemanson, James, 36.
Yeocomoco, 162.
York, 43, 52.
York county, 48, 52, 67, 71, 89, 90, 91, 92, 118, 150, 156.
York River, 9, 11, 12, 13, 85, 114, 118, 143, 156.
Yorkshire, 93, 161.
Yorktown, 13, 42, 43.
Younge, 36; Ione, 38; Richard, 38; vx, 38; Mr., 109.
Youghtamund, 13.

DEC -1 1934

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS
0 014 444 012 2